

# THE SPIRIT REALM

SPIRITISM HAS REVEALED THE  
REALITY OF OUR EXISTENCE

BRIAN FOSTER

## Introduction

This book is a survey of what I have learned via reading books psychographed by Spiritist mediums, other mediums, observing during Spiritist medium's meetings, receiving messages from spirits and talking to other Spiritists. This book is not meant as a documented exhaustive study of all available materials from the other side. In my other books, I quote from spirit sources and explain what was told to us via Spiritist mediums. In my accumulation of fourteen books, I have written to date, I have usually adopted the process of quoting a pertinent message and then expounding and expanding upon it, with other spirit sources and my analysis. All with a bibliography and footnotes.

In this book I shall take a more informal approach. It shall be more of a survey and explanation about the spirit realm I place before you. A conversation backed by years of study and research, but nevertheless, largely my own opinion, after sifting through a myriad of sources and experiences.

*The Spirit Realm – Spiritism has Revealed the Reality of Our Existence* is divided into four sections:

1. The Organization of the Universes
2. The Residents of the Universes
3. Spiritual Ascension
4. The Future

I do not pretend that I am accurate. I believe I am directionally correct, and only that. We are so immature, spiritually young, and generally ungifted that we are incapable of real understanding of the spirit realm. But this does not stop me from offering my own thoughts of what I believe is the certainty of our existence.

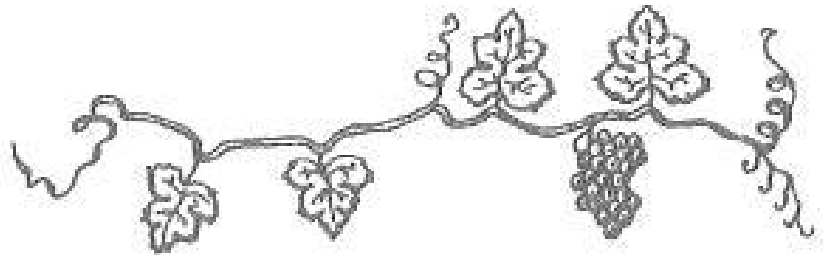
The true reality in which we live, die, and live again for eternity, until we no longer need to incarnate in a physical body, is far beyond what most of us can imagine. The laws of physics mostly do not apply. The concept of time and distance are altered, and the landscape itself reacts to directives from high spirits and collective thoughts. Spirits are logical constructs, who for training purposes inhabit temporary physical bodies in order to learn required and valuable lessons to alter their personalities for the better.

All of this sounds beyond the realm of plausibility. But, as the spirit universes unfold, the logic becomes apparent and our place within it fully explains the chaos and inequalities of our planet and of our ups and downs of our life.

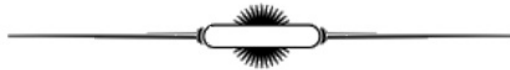
With understanding and knowledge comes wisdom and tranquility. Once you start the journey of discovery of who you truly are and the real worlds you shall exist in, a doorway of light opens and begs you to step in to feel the love that surrounds you during your ascent to become a pure spirit.



# The Spirit Realm – Spiritism has Revealed the Reality of our Existence



By  
Brian Foster



<http://www.nwspiritism.com/>

1<sup>st</sup> Edition

# Table of Contents

[Introduction](#)

[The Spirit Realm – Spiritism has Revealed the Reality of our Existence](#)

[Table of Contents](#)

[Section 1 – The Organization of the Universes](#)

[Chapter 1 – Physical Universe](#)

[Different Dimensions](#)

[Types of Planets](#)

[Laws that Govern Our Physical Universe](#)

[The Complete Picture](#)

[Chapter 2 – Spirit Universe](#)

[Universal Fluid](#)

[Universal Fluid Shaped by Spirits](#)

[The Areas of the Spirit Universe](#)

[The Lower Zone](#)

[The Dark Abyss](#)

[The Earth’s Heaven](#)

[The First Levels of Heaven](#)

[Higher Levels of Heaven](#)

[Chapter 3 – Christ](#)

[My Kingdom is not of This World](#)

[Our Governor](#)

[The Appearance of Christ](#)

[The Home of Christ](#)

[Ceremonies of Christ](#)

[Christ Teaching in the Spirit Realm](#)

[The Ministers of Christ](#)

[The Leadership of Christ](#)

[Chapter 4 – God](#)

[The Spirits’ Book Definition of God](#)

[Hints of God](#)

[God the Matrix](#)

[God Implanted Within Us](#)

[Section 2 – The Residents of the Spirit Universe](#)

[The Unfortunates](#)

[Immortality and Time](#)

Free Will

The Encapsulation of Personality.

Chapter 5 – Spirits

Spirit

The Perispirit

Physical Body.

Spirit to Physical

The Hierarchy of Spirits

Third Order Spirits

Second Order Spirits

First Order of Spirits

Chapter 6 – The Journey of a Spirit

Growth on a Planet of Atonement

The Law of Affinity

The Function of Purgatory.

Education of Spirits

Traversing the Universal Database

Graduation from One Level to Another

Promotion to Lead a New Race

The Journey.

Section 3 – Spiritual Ascension

What is Perfection

The Process of Perfection

Spiral Progress

Examples of Spiral Progress

The Long View

Chapter 7 – Our Beginning and Journey.

Action and Reaction

Consequence of Karma and the Physical Body.

We are Accountable for our Deeds

Analysis of our Behavior

Dreams are Sent to Assist Us

Dreams are an Escape from Our Physical Body into the Spirit Realm

How a Dream Helped

Another Example of Dreams Helping a Person

Our Progress is Tracked

Learning Through Each Life

Prayers are Processed and Answered  
How Does the Spirit World Analyze Our Prayers  
Our Guardian Angel  
The Physical Journey

Chapter 8 – What Do We Do Now

The Path  
Trust in God and Yourself  
A Serene Conscience  
Time Spent on Production Matters  
A Constructive Speech  
A Prayer Allied to Work  
Hope in Action  
An Industrious Patience  
A Dispassionate Opinion  
The Blessing of Comprehension  
A Participation in Everyone's Progress  
A Compassionate Attitude  
Truth Enlightened by Love  
Oblivion of Evils  
Happiness in your Commitments  
Unconditional Forgiveness  
A Devotion to Study  
A Gesture of Kindness  
An Encouraging Smile  
Spontaneity to Assist Others  
Simplicity of Habits  
A Spirit of Renovation  
Fostering of Tolerance  
Courage to Place Yourself Second to Serving  
Perseverance in Goodness  
Spiritism

Section 4 – The Future

The Regenerative Planet  
Prophecy will Guide Us  
Role of Prophecy  
The Future of Earth is Certain

Chapter 9 – It's All Planned Out

[Chess Pieces](#)  
[Spirits Sent on Missions](#)  
[Complexity](#)  
[Help from Other Worlds](#)  
[The Evolution has Begun](#)  
[Chapter 10 – Our Individual Future](#)  
[The Journey](#)  
[The Reality](#)  
[Free Will](#)  
[Love](#)  
[Guidance is Everywhere](#)  
[You Oversee Your Future](#)  
[The Alpha and the Omega](#)  
[The Future of the Remnant](#)  
[Glossary](#)  
[Your Exploration Continues . . .](#)  
[Heaven and Below – Book 1](#)  
[Spirits and the Spirit Universe – Book 2](#)  
[How we are Guided by Spirits – Book 3](#)  
[How to Live – Inner Peace through Spiritism](#)  
[Spiritism 101 – The Third Revelation](#)  
[The 1000 Year March – Toward a Just Society](#)  
[7 Tenets of Spiritism – How They Impact Your Daily Life](#)  
[Explore Your Destiny – Since Your Life’s Path is \(mostly\) Predetermined](#)  
[The Case for Reincarnation – Your Path to Perfection](#)  
[51 Disclosures from Spiritism – The 3<sup>rd</sup> Revelation](#)  
[What Really Happens During Near Death Experiences, According to Spiritism](#)  
[The Problem is the Solution](#)  
[Spiritism – Everything is Connected](#)  
[Author](#)  
[Copyright](#)  
[Bibliography](#)  
[Footnotes](#)







## Section 1 – The Organization of the Universes

A place. You believe you were born in a place, raised and went to school in a place, and now you are reading this book in a place. You are not, you are in consciousness. You are a logical construct operating within a set of Divine Laws.

All of this is so indistinct, fuzzy, hazy, and non-comprehensible. There seems to be no solid foundation for a rational point of view to see and understand consciousness.

There is, but one must first change how to perceive the external world. This is what this book entails, how to analyze the true environment in which you live, how to relate to yourself, and how to think and prepare for your life as an immortal spirit.

First to lessen the heaviness of the word consciousness, which could mean many things to different people, I will use the word spirit universe. The use of the word universe gives a sense of physicality, a handle upon which to hold in order to scope out this grand mirage that is our current home.

Second, as you read, think of yourself as a character in a video game. It could be on your phone, your laptop, or your desktop computer. Your character is real to you. Inside that game, reality is present - your reality. Time moves, because you are drawn into different situations. Others interact with you. Some good, some bad, some to merely point you in a certain direction.

Houses are real to you, walls are impassable, and you can be killed. Although you can be resurrected to be used again. You have no idea that you are just a piece of software that a person or a coordinated team of software engineers designed, wrote, and tested.

When the device you live within is turned off, you have no sense of it. On the other hand, when you travel, whether by foot, or car, or ship, you sense that you have gone a distance. Whereas you only experienced a change of state. At one moment you were in one location, another in a state of apparent movement, and lastly in a new state, the place where you were

unconsciously sent. Nothing changed, only the determined set of scenery assigned to you was altered.

Your character may be programmed to be aggressive when he or she spots an enemy. Unbeknownst to you, you react how a guiding force commands you, but in your mind, it was your decision. You believe you travel and act as you see fit. The software that facilitates commands to yourself and the characters around you are undetected.

In your mind there are concepts of up and down. You think of heaven as being above the Earth and hell is below it. Whereas the truth is stranger. Every location, place, environment, and habitat are contained in the same field. Only the data describing the arena you think you are in has changed.

Your personality is gifted with artificial intelligence; hence you learn as you journey and meet new characters. As you progress you believe you are wiser. Yet, you are unaware of the true reality in which you exist.

This is essentially where we live, die, live, and die over and over again until we have reached perfection.





## Chapter 1 – Physical Universe

We shall start at the bottom and work ourselves upwards. Although there is no up or down or sideways, only different states within an impossibly dense living informational structure. Be that as it may, think of the universe we believe we know as the first step of a ladder, or as the tiniest Russian doll in the cascading larger covering Russian dolls. That is us, literally the end, nowhere else to go. The bottom node of a data tree.

This seemingly heavy and matter filled space was created as an area to fulfill a specific function. The training of immature sparks of intelligence into a more useful and beautiful creatures of love, wisdom, and charity.

Hence, our physical universe was born out of the spirit universe – the high lords who command and control the spirit universe, were guided by the word of God to create the sun, sky, and earth. The physical universe is our sandbox, where we may spend our time as childish spirits.

### **Different Dimensions**

All planets, solar systems, clusters, and galaxies have all been fashioned by teams of very high spirits (on the level of Christ and higher) for our benefit. Within the vastness of the physical universe there exists different dimensions. Therefore, even within our own solar system, there are planets, that appear to be deserted or gaseous balls which are actually livable for the life forms designed by their spirit benefactors.

For example, in *The Spirits' Book* I read a passage about life on Jupiter. I immediately thought that this reference invalidates the entirety of Spiritism. I carried on, putting aside the reference to a planet, to which our science and senses deem must be inhospitable. Eventually, I read an account of a spirit who went to classes in the heavens surrounding the planet Mars, as part of his education in the heavens above Earth.

As the works of the Rev. G. Vale Owen supplied more context to the spirit universe, I discovered that within our physical universe there are other planets not detectable to our current state of technology, but which will be so in the future. There is also life on planets existing in a different dimension altogether (such as Mars and Jupiter) which seems to be

composed of one set of minerals and gases in our dimension, but which are quite practicable for life in another dimension.

Mars being an example of a planet full of life, which is closed to our eyes. The spirit who communicated to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, told us that human-like life on Mars thinks of Earth as a mysterious planet like humans on Earth have thought of Mars over the past centuries. We have also been told that Mars, like Earth is a planet of atonement, but Mars is somewhat behind the Earth in its path to become a planet of regeneration.

### **Types of Planets**

Which brings us to the graduated level of planets which serve as steppingstones in the education of spirits. The first incubation for humans with free will is a primitive planet. This is where socialization for animals, who have previously lived by instinct, with a small amount of free will or self-direction, are placed to begin their long journey to become a mature spirit.

A typical culture has been described by a spirit who was a witness at a group of spirits as they were being told they were to be reborn on a primitive planet. Since they did not conform to the civilizing influences of a planet of atonement. They were given an example of their future home: When two men wish to marry the same woman, the two men will fight to the death for the right to marry her. The victor attains the prize, and the loser is eaten at the wedding festival. All very efficient for the low-level humans who must eek out their daily living.

It must be stressed that being reborn on an inferior planet is not a punishment. Instead, it is the last resort to educate spirits who refuse to improve themselves while living on a campus on the level of a planet of atonement. These sorry specimens of reluctant learning will bring with them some of the civilizing influences which they foolishly rejected. Thrown into a backward society, they will instinctively attempt to improve that which is lacking in their opinion. This shall be done by their faint memories and feelings of a life better lived on a superior globe. Thusly, they shall contribute to the march of progress of tribal culture.

The same process occurred on Earth. Races of people who clung to their primitive emotions and stubbornly rejected the trials presented to them to

tear out hate, jealousy, selfishness, and pride, were sent from a planet of atonement, or higher, to the Earth, so they could guide the human races to the next level of civilization.

The next level is a planet of atonement. Where spirits are sent to really begin to learn how to behave and to start the process of improving their conscience and instincts. The word atonement implies that as humans act wrongly in one life, they will learn the ramifications of their actions in their present or their next life. This is where you are now living.

The social and cultural life on a planet such as ours is extremely stressful. But it will come to an end, just as that tremendously difficult class or episode you once had. As in our earthly school systems there are higher levels to which are funneled the graduates of the lower levels.

After the planet of atonement is the planet of regeneration. Where spirits are amongst other civilized beings. A campus where we may rest after the harsh removal of most of our primitive personality traits. Our Earth is now in the twilight of being a planet of atonement and is in the dawn of commencing the great battle to reform humankind and our entire world culture. Spirits tell us that this trek began around the year two thousand.

Life shall be easier, our paths to adulthood more tranquil, and our careers will flourish as we will be supported by kind and wise benefactors. The daily worries of violence and random destruction will be eliminated. People are not perfect, there are still wrinkles to iron out. Our journey to purity, will be assisted more openly by our knowledge that the spirit realm is watching over us. This next level will transform the Earth into the paradise that it should have been from the beginning.

And there are levels beyond. Next is the happy worlds, where humans will evolve with senses more acute and intellectual capacity increased. The cumbersome density of our current bodies shall be lessened; instead of heavy footsteps we may glide to our destination. The years of confused adolescence shall be vastly shortened, while our overall lifespan will significantly expand. Aging will not occur gradually, instead, people will remain relatively young looking until the final years.

There will be an absence of conflicts between nations. People will work together to solve problems – political maneuvering to acquire power would

be assigned to the dustbin of history. Our leaders shall be selected upon their merits – wisdom, love, honesty, charity, and fraternity.

Hatred, jealousies, and selfishness are not present. All feel a sense of fraternity and love, where the strong assist the weak. Possessions are in keeping with a person's intelligence and no one lacks their basic needs for living.

Most likely, when the Earth becomes a happy world, the planet will ascend to a different dimension, and become undetectable to planets of inferior degree.

There is still one more level in our physical universe – divine world. A globe where evil has been eradicated, where all commune with the spirit world, and love is the rule not the exception. This type of planet is inhabited by purified spirits.

Hence, the physical universe has been rigorously planned to be a series of advancing learning centers for spirits. As in our world, where elementary schools feed into middle schools, into high schools, and then in colleges, spirits too are shepherded from beginning to end in a quest for improvement.

These advance levels are where the star journeying aliens will come from to visit our little backwater, to provide impetus to move us forward. The other advanced civilizations will well understand the structure of the spirit and the physical universe and will not interfere with human society (in a large scale) until they are given permission by high spirits.

Thus, the purpose of the physical universe is to be a place of education. The environment is specifically fashioned to be conducive to instruction. Individuals are moved from one campus to another as superior spirits determine the best location for our education and associated trials. Hence, we are not always citizens of the planet Earth, but merely transients who have been assigned here. In some lives we may be resident on our globe and in others on a planet on the other side of the galaxy, then back here again, to try another experience. The important fact to remember, is that every campus and set of trials we are shuttled to are for our own edification. God desires every spirit to ascend to purity one day and the series of lessons are all planned with the utmost love and care.



## **Laws that Govern Our Physical Universe**

Hence, there are a set of Physical Laws that only operate within the confines of our physical universe. Spirits have told us, that we live in an objective cosmos. Meaning, that our view of the world does not change the reality of the environment surrounding us. Mountains are mountains, walls are solid and impassable, space is vast and vacant. Our thoughts do not affect the parameters of our reality. While thoughts are the architect of the spirit world - in our physical universe, thoughts must be conjoined with physical labor to alter the landscape. And even then, only within narrow possibilities.

As a horse is often fitted with blinkers to keep them focused on the race at hand, we on earth, are similarly handicapped. Spirits tells us that our senses only see one eighth of the world around us. Sounds that a spirit would hear handily go unnoticed by us when we are locked in our dense coverings.

A man who had an out of body experience, traveled to a library in the spirit world. In an immense reading room, surrounded by rows upon rows of books upon numerous shelves, he sat at a table. He had his head placed at an angle to a column opposite him. When he moved his chair, it made a slight squeaking sound. He reported that he could tell the difference in which the sound generated by moving the feet of the chair upon the wood floor bounced off the column and reached his right ear, and then milliseconds later reached his left ear. Such an acuteness is only reproducible by complex instruments in our physical realm.

Spirits, and people who have had near death experiences, find themselves at a loss for words when they are asked to describe the variety of colors, they have seen in the spirit universe. Humans can only perceive colors over wavelengths from 400 nanometers (violet) to 700 nanometers (red). Our visible range is quite limited compared to the capabilities of a spirit. Even the gradations of tints within the wavelengths we are capable of detecting, is gross for us as measured against the ability of a spirit.

The lack of acute senses is melded with an unpolished body. Where spirits and humans on higher worlds glide, we step heavily. Spirits tell us of their wonderful feeling of being free of such a suffocating suit as the human body. It is as if a man was chained down with weights for ten years and then

one lucky day, he was freed. The sensation of lightness would be enchanting and a cause for celebration.

It is thus for a purpose; the body is meant to be one more burden on top of the others. With the weight of our atmosphere and gravity upon us, we are forced to work and strive to eat for survival. Whereas a spirit requires only energy from water, sunlight, or the very air - a human, from the primitive tribesmen to the office worker must toil to feed himself regularly or perish. Hence, we are, from birth, meant to be pushed to constantly find an occupation so we may earn what we require to survive.

The last major organ that is meant to limit our options is our brain. There is so much latent capacity present in our cerebral sphere! Spirits have revealed that telepathy and other marvelous abilities shall be ours, when we are spiritually ready.

Unfortunately, yet, that door is not open to us. Until we demonstrate the aptitude to use the increase of intellectual power in a selfless manner, we are not allowed that pleasure. A fourteen-year-old is not legally able to drive, even though he or she may think they are ready for it, because wiser minds have determined that the young at that age are delusional and irresponsible and not fit to wield anything with that much potential for destruction. We are looked upon no differently.

Added to our burden of our human form, there is another physical law, created by the spirit world, to keep us on the correct path, no matter how much we protest or resist – time. Time marches on, time is fleeting, time is the most valuable resource a man can spend, lost time is never found again. All sayings we have heard notifying us of the unrelentless forward movement of time. Time is like the treadmill that never stops. We are literally never at rest, for even as we sit quietly contemplating, time is doing its work. It moves us onto the next lesson and at the same moment, decays our body so we are ever cognizant that our time left is counting down.

The spirit world is sending us this message: Get your work done before you deteriorate away completely!

Whereas, in the spirit world, where you shall return to, there is no time. It should be thought of as duration. Objects are made, by the will of spirits. These objects may stand for all eternity, unless reformed by the will of a

higher spirit, or fashioned to exist for a set duration. Therefore, there is no decay, no rusting away, in the land of the subjective. A logical construct where thoughts are given form and retain that form as long as the thought persists.

One more major difference is space. Not space as in outer space, but in the measuring of distances. On Earth, when you go to the store or to a friend's house, you travel from point A to point B. The distance can be measured in miles or kilometers. Spirits in the spirit realm urge us to not think in terms of physical distance, but in presence or absence. When you reside in the higher reaches of the spirit world, you think of where you wish to be, and you are there. You did not travel per se, instead you change the state of your environment.

### **The Complete Picture**

All of this has a purpose. Any good learning environment will serve to focus the student on the task at hand. Hence, allowing rough and unpolished spirits to conjure buildings, roads, statues, and palaces, is counterproductive to the ultimate goal. That being to alter our character and personality.

By keeping the scenery static, locking down the power of our senses and mind, we are then forced to deal with each imperfection of our character. Socrates told us that being a wise person on earth is impossible since we have a thousand different emotions and opinions flying around our heads at any given moment. Socrates probably knew, but believed his students weren't ready to understand that this emotive bombardment is precisely the fulcrum required to pry primitive leanings out of our hearts to allow civilized manners to firmly set in place.

Therefore, even though our human minds see our physical universe in terms of geometry and matter – up, down, sideways, length, height, width, solid, gas, plasma, Bose-Einstein condensate, and with the added bonus of decay over time thrown in, all of that is the consequence of the programming assigned to us while we have been allowed to come to the physical world.

Make no mistake, coming to our planet, even one as chaotic and cruel as ours, is a privilege, not a right. Leaving this campus before the allotted time is frowned upon, as well as destroying your physical body by foolish life

choices, will have consequences in the terms of your next sojourn on a planet in the physical universe.

Hence, the physical universe is a construct, a subset of the spirit universe, that exists for a specific purpose – the education, improvement, and graduation of spirits into a sublimity that we cannot imagine.





## Chapter 2 – Spirit Universe

Beyond the imagination is a time worn phrase, but apt for the spirit universe. Why? Because we here on Earth, locked in the outlook of “reality” – meaning solid objects, unchanging landscape, rules which cannot be broken, consequences which are often deadly, et al, can only approximate a true subjective world. Where intellect and imagination were the creator, not absolute physical forces over the course of eons.

Our mythology of wizards and wands of great power, of spells spoken, and incantations bringing forth spirits, of castles appearing in the mist, are poor reflections of the vast and infinite beatitude of what is on top and surrounding our physical universe.

Let us start with a small story to begin to expose the truth of the spirit universe. A man, a spirit from the lower regions, was climbing toward a higher plane in the spirit world. He was searching for his wife, to plead forgiveness of his multiple wrongs. The trek was long and difficult. He laboriously scaled over large boulders on a steep incline. His wife, a poor woman who had committed suicide, due to the husband’s murder of her child, was sitting on a rock overlooking the valley below. Unbeknownst to her, the husband was ascending out of her view. He came to a spot where he could make her out. Then he saw a young boy running toward her. It was a scene of unbridled love. At first, the husband did not understand who the boy was, but then he thought of what would be the age of the child that he killed at the present time. The tableau of the woman, her child, and husband was watched by a higher spirit. He was sent to this low level, next to the boundary of heaven, to ascertain what to do to the man on a quest for forgiveness.

The spirit closely examined the mind of the husband. A great anger overcame him, the sight of the child that he so cruelly threw into a river as a baby let forth a tidal wave of primitive emotions. Losing control of himself, he fell from a boulder and his body rapidly hit multiple rocks, shrubs, and trees on his way down to the bottom of the ravine. His body laid to rest in a green grassy area. The spirit came to him. He knew the man was fine. No bodily harm is possible in the spirit world, but since the man did not fully realize he was a spirit and not a physically dense human, his thoughts caused him to feel pain and to be momentarily unconscious. As he laid on

the bed of thick moist grass, the roots and the blades of grass slowly turned brown and dry, making an outline of desolation around his body. The spirit explained that the man was unconsciously modifying his environment to suite his state of mind. The angel on a mission pointed out that spirits at the level of the husband did not understand the world they were thrust into. They had no concept that their minds could affect the very atmosphere around them.

The spirit peering deep into the thoughts of the husband, lifted him up and carried him to a lower level. A station more befitting his still retrograde character. More time would be needed before the man would learn to cast off his anger and be allowed to ascend to where his wife and son awaited him. For they, wanted the opposite of what we would desire on earth, instead of punishment and revenge, they wished for him to repair his ways and to see and absorb within himself the light and love of God.

### **Universal Fluid**

How can an environment dynamically respond to the unconscious orders of a spirit? What magic is this which alters the fabric of a landscape upon a command? We are told by spirits, as far back as the 1850s that there is one basic compound which has the potential to morph into all the elements of the spirit and physical universes – Universal Fluid.

Via manipulation by thought, Universal Fluid is molded into various densities, vibrations, and properties to make whatever is required. From ethereal atoms, to dense iron, to the composition of human beings, everything in the universes depends upon and is made from Universal Fluid.

Universal Fluid shaped and composed by a human filter upon command of a spirit is capable of directly effecting our health. I regularly travel, with my wife and a few friends, to a spiritual healing center. While I go and always feel stronger and more refreshed afterwards, I cannot point to any dramatic healing – but there are others who can.

First, how does this spiritual care function? In practice, a healing medium stands before the patient, a spirit behind the medium, utilizes the medium to deliver Universal Fluid to the patient. But this fluid must be customized for each person, just like a blood transfusion must match the

blood type of the recipient. The spirit, via the medium, transforms the fluid to match the correct vibration, density, and harmony of the patient. And that bolt of fluidic energy is directed at the organ centers which require assistance.

The same process occurs in spiritual passes. Whereby a medium slowly moves their hands and arms along the body of a person, while a spirit behind the medium is using them to deliver a specific amount of unique energy to the receiver of the pass. All of this can only be accomplished with three items. The spirit, the medium, and Universal Fluid.

This process is capable of great healing, which cannot be explained by our current state of medical science. When I was at the spiritual healing center, I met a man who was filming the medium. He told me that he was trying to get a production company interested in exploring the life of the medium. He desired to do this because of what happened many years in the past. He had a friend, in the Los Angeles area, who was diagnosed with a brain tumor, a fast-acting dangerous cancer. This person was told they would have to be operated on. And that one of two things would be the result. One, they would die, the other is that they would lose some of their functions, like speech or the ability to walk.

This person did not like the odds, so they researched alternatives. They found the spiritual healing center in Brazil, in the city of Rio Novo in the state of Minas Gerais, just about two and half hours from Rio de Janeiro. The man I met was born and raised in Brazil and he could speak Portuguese. He had spent much of his adulthood in California. Therefore, he was asked to accompany the patient.

He told me that the patient went and was told to come back for four more weeks, then the treatment would be completed. Afterwards, the patient went to the doctor in Los Angeles and requested to be re-examined. The doctor discovered the tumor had been greatly reduced. The doctor said that now surgery would not be needed, that chemotherapy would destroy the remnant of the tumor.

There are thousands of stories of unexpected and unexplained healing. Most of them put down to either coincidence or the power of positive thinking. But what is positive thinking but the application of focusing your mind to refashion spirit energy for your desired goal!



People with near death experiences have also related miraculous cures. There is a recollection by a man, who when he was a boy was ran over by a car. He was taken to a hospital, where the doctors told his parents his outlook was extremely doubtful. They were notified they had better call a priest. The priest came to the boy, and took one look at him, winked, and whispered that he would be fine.

The boy made it through the night, with some drama, but when the doctors came back to look at him in the afternoon, the pool of blood that had been flooding his internal organs had dissipated. It was not a miracle, instead it was the work of spirits manipulating Universal Fluid to repair the damage done by the car which caused havoc with his body. Spirits utilized the foundational elements of the universe to repair a human body, and it seems they also must have communicated the true state of the boy's future to the priest.

From the tiniest detail to the formation of galaxies and planets, Universal Fluid is the key. It made the spirit universe, and it fashioned the physical universe, and the many graduations of dimensions in-between.

Universal Fluid has no inherent intelligence, it is the combination of this foundational component of energy and matter combined with spirit essence (the intelligent element) which creates the semi-autonomous elementals, animals, and free willed humans in spirit and physical and spirit form which populate all corners of the universe(s).

It is always in motion; in fact, this motion makes it what it is. By varying the direction, the incline, the density, and various other factors, it becomes whatever it is commanded to be by the will of a spirit.

### **Universal Fluid Shaped by Spirits**

I have said that we live in a logical construct, but if that is so, why have physicality (or at least the appearance of the physical)? Why have something other than information which can be interpreted by an intelligent process? The answer must lie with how spirits need to be guided from primitive personalities to mature, powerful spirits with boundless energy and free will.

Young toddlers play with sand, dirt, or whatever they can lay their hands on to shape the world around them. As children grow, they use more

sophisticated building blocks to fashion homes, forts, castles, and miniature cities. The act of creation, of trial and error in building, is an indispensable step in the maturation of intelligence. Hence, instead of clay or other molding compound, we are gifted with Universal Fluid.

It is a composite of limitless uses and of vast capabilities. It is the foundation on which rest the gift of intelligence to those creatures created by God. Only through an intermediate, whereby the illusion of density pervades can God's creatures become what He has desired of them.

For the truth of the above statement, look to how AI (artificial intelligence) is considered in our world, in our primitive technology. Yes, AI has applications in a pure informational environment, but it is generally realized that this poses severe limitations. Without a window to the outside the AI application only rises to the level of a sophisticated expert machine. A highly complex and efficient shifter and filter of information. Capable of analysis, but not of originality, wisdom, or genius in relation to our world.

Hence, the quest to introduce "eyes" or cameras to the application and the addition of robotic arms, legs, torso, and emotional faces. The replacement and/or supplement of human beings is the true goal of AI. We wish for them to be our slaves, to make a world where there is only leisure for the lucky humans. Or at the least, replace the expense of salaries with capitalization and depreciation in order to make the rich even more powerful and wealthy.

The potential nirvana of a compliant robotic society is attractive, on many levels. Robot humanoids which can be trusted, don't rebel, don't call in sick, don't talk back, and never need a vacation, have benefits for every layer of society. Although, there is a fear that the percentage of humans which are unable to function at a semi-intelligent level may be left out – nonetheless they too could be assisted if our society is a true fraternal and charitable one.

What is true of the Earth is true in the spirit world. If God desires servants of the good, who are submersed in light and love, then they must be guided and educated in an atmosphere which allows them to become so. Therefore, an avenue to introduce more than data and pictures was created.

How the spirit universe was fashioned is unknown to us. Only that spirits have used a similar expression as is found in the Old Testament, “in the beginning God created the heavens.” Although this sentence relates to the physical universe, the commencement of the spirit universe, which precedes the physical universe, is likewise shrouded in mystery for spirits in the levels of heaven surrounding our planet. Nevertheless, it was born, and Universal Fluid was an original component.

Whether Universal Fluid is composed of matter or is a highly intricate logical process which appears to be matter and is governed by a set of Divine Laws is immaterial. For all intents and purposes, to spirits and humans alike it functions as some form of real, tangible, malleable, energy, gas, liquid, or solid or ethereal object. An object that is apparently real, for it can be touched and manipulated.

In the physical universe it must be handled, by man or machines. In the spirit universe it is manipulated by thought – although it can be modified by spirit manual labor, such as cutting a flower from a stem. Whereas a flower cut in our earthly existence would wilt and decay, a bloom in the spirit realm would simply disappear when its allotted duration was at end.

And this is a good place to start, on a small scale, with a knowable object – a flower. Picture a bed of ruby-red pansies. A spirit comes along and lays down on the beautiful flowers. On Earth, the pansies would be crushed, and likely not survive. Whereas in the spirit realm, the pansies would be depressed under the presence of the spirit. When the spirit arose and walked away, the state of pressure upon the flowers ceased. Thereupon, the flowers would regain their original shape.

That original shape was dictated by a spirit who created the small garden. He or she willed the pansies into existence, when an outside force intruded, the flowers followed a logical rule and were affected by the temporary force. Once the mass was removed, they reverted to the commands of the spirit, and became a bed of perfect ruby-red pansies. This little spot of grace would last until the spirit willed it. Or if the spirit gave the location a definite duration of existence, or if a superior spirit determined that the pansies should be removed for some other point of pleasure. All logical rules programmed into the very being of the bed of

flowers. The pansies were not grown from seeds but were manufactured by the manipulation of Universal Fluid. All commanded by thought!

The plasticity of the fluid is unimaginable to most of us. The very space that exists for a creation can be expanded, where there appeared to be none. Let us take a more complex example. There was a small colony on the lower levels of heaven. The people there had advanced, so they were ready to move up in the hierarchy of spiritual growth.

In the middle of the small town there was a multi-purpose meeting hall. Everyone was invited to attend the assembly. The spirit leading the small group and the gathering's most mature and spiritual leaders knew the purpose of the meeting, but no one else did. Inside the large space, there were no windows to the outside, so the attendees could not detect any modifications to the world on the other side of the four walls. To them, they had left their houses, parks, places of study and work for a meeting. Nothing unusual.

Then the high spirit in charge of the colony and several of her assistants walked to the front. They announced that the residents of the colony have made wonderful progress and hence, they would be elevated to a superior sphere.

As the leader told them about their new life, the walls became transparent. Instead of their pleasant village, they saw a greater expanse. Parks, buildings on a grander and more ornate scale, statues, fountains, and a forest – all where their town use to reside.

The populace was amazed and gratified. They poured out of the building, anxious to explore their new town.

No manufacturing equipment were utilized, only thought. Groups of high spirits came together and fashioned the new city. A place for spirits to learn and prosper, befitting the more exalted level they have attained.

All this was the results of will. Of idealization, formation, planning, cooperation, and focused energy in rendering the old logical structure into a new environment. Whereas, once the dimensions of the town were small, now they were large. The town grew into a city. No outside areas were bulldozed to make way. Only the parameters of the location were given new values and coordinates.

One of the new buildings was the chief spirit's house. Before the group of talented spirits imagined the building into existence, they made a model. It served as a focal point for the group so they could visualize the same outcome. The intended edifice was planned to be more than an abode, but also a city hall, a place where people worked, met, made decisions, and were sent out on tasks.

After the building was completed, the group decided to keep the model. They placed it in a small park in front of the building. Any spirit wishing to come to the building for any specific purpose, could investigate the model and determine which room they had to visit, or they could see if who they desired to meet, was present and in which office.

Think of how this could be accomplished in our present world. Miles of wires and numerous sensors would have to be placed in order to correctly display the status of each office, conference room, and person. A huge software effort would have been initiated to regulate and post information to the correct database. In addition, the required updating of the application to provide a current listing of all functions and times, would be a constant task.

Instead of gross material, Universal Fluid was fashioned into the correct form, and rules were applied to the new building, as well as intelligent connections to the model outside. All of this would work forever, without error or decay. Only the original team or other high spirits could modify what was built.

### **The Areas of the Spirit Universe**

Spirits have revealed the spirit domain to be full of life. What we see of our physical universe appears to be enormous reaches of vacuum with small dots of material, planets, suns, asteroids, and comets interspersed. This is all a construct, an object created to place spirits into individual campuses, with enough distance in between to keep them focused on their studies.

Whereas, in the spirit universe, the most efficient mode of conveyance is by thought, called volitation in Spiritist literature. Where one imagines or remembers a destination and then, by force of will is transported there. But to where? If the spirit universe is indeed one infinite and eternal matrix,

where everything is, was, and will be, is stored and collated, then how can one get anywhere?

Like the signs on the walls and nameplates on the doors of large buildings, there are distinct locations in the spirit world. They may be just an appointed state for a set of data, but to a spirit they constitute reality.

There are rules to where a spirit may explore. These will be discussed in the chapter on spirits. In summary, spirits are only allowed into areas that are on their level or below. To attempt to rise above without the proper attributes and knowledge is extremely uncomfortable. Not because of any walls or moats, but each separate environment has its own qualifications for entrance. And to enter an atmosphere where a spirit does not have the right stuff is too overwhelming, too bright, too much energy to absorb.

This inability to venture beyond our capability, illustrates the complexity of the infinite we live in. It is not just data where one may traverse the matrix at will. Where you peek into and experience the effects of the information surrounding you. The spirit universe seems to have substance which is closely collated with data. Although, it may be all units of some sort, the processing rules for travelling through the universal web gives it a tincture of reality, of solidness, which gives us a sense of comfort. A feeling that we are not all lightness, but of material and consequence. This, I believe is done for our benefit. Whereas, as we reach higher and higher toward God, we may not require a solid physical foundation to rest upon.

To begin to explore our true environment, as relatively immature spirits, we must start with our Earth as a model. There is a physical planet and there are spiritual regions associated with it. Each planet in our physical universe contains an encapsulation of different dimensions – a heaven, a lower zone, and an abyss. Although superior planets may no longer require a lower zone or an abyss.

One may describe, in visual terms, that our Earth is surrounded by levels of heaven, then from the lowest level of heaven starts the lower zone. The lower zone begins at the crust of the earth. Below the lower zone is the abyss, which is a type of purgatory. Also called the “Dark Abyss” in Spiritist literature.

Imagine the planets of our solar system rotating around the sun. Each sphere has these levels, the heavens expand outward from the planet, so that as the planets circumnavigate the sun, the heavens may sometimes overlap or touch each other.

Now think of our solar system, located within the Orion Arm. As our solar system is in constant movement within the Orion Arm, the Orion Arm is itself a spiral rotating within our galaxy. All journeying tens of thousands of years in elliptical paths within spirals.

Are there heavens associated with groups of solar systems, with spiral arms, with whole galaxies? I do not know. I have not read of any description of the exact layering of heavens, beyond the planet level, yet. I have read that there are more graduations of heavens above our Earth. Spirits have hinted that levels go up and out beyond what we can see, even they (those who have chosen to communicate with us about this subject) are in the dark as to the exact configuration of what is above our local heaven.

### **The Lower Zone**

Before heaven is explored, the areas below it must be described. The Lower Zone begins at the crust of the Earth and extends upward to the first level of heaven. Chico Xavier, the late great Brazilian Spiritist medium, told us that about thirty percent of people rise to heaven after they pass over. This leaves seventy percent of humans on earth staying near or below the surface when they leave their physical body.

The environments of the Lower Zone vary greatly. On the surface of the Earth, spirits roam in the same space as we do. We, the incarnates, are unable to detect their presence. They can see us, and they do interact with us. They read our thoughts and send ideas and urges into our minds. Our life is an open book to the spirits surrounding us.

As the Lower Zone extends into the sky, there are entire cities, villages, and lone souls wandering about. The light is dim, and the vegetation is sparse and mishappened. The Lower Zone is not composed of wandering zombies crying out in the night. Although cries of anguish and suffering are heard. It is organized. The towns are ruled by strict and menacing warlords. There are constant battles between cruel malevolent strongman for rights of territory and slaves.

Within the cities there are factories to produce goods for use in the Lower Zones. There are mines worked by slaves. Poor spirits who landed in the spirit world and were taken to be of use by dominant spirits. These souls did not have the spiritual credit to be assisted out of their body by helpful angelic spirits. Hence, they were left to fend for themselves in the Lower Zone.

The large cities are fortified. They must be, otherwise they would be overrun by opposing forces. The architecture varies, but the central motif is one of decay. Nothing appears pristine. This includes the people. Their dress is shabby and torn – but it must be noted that this is how the populace appears to a spirit from heaven. They appear normal to themselves.

The general ambiance is prison like. No one is trusted. All goods, even freedom, are in a precarious state and may be taken at any time. Nevertheless, there is a working society in the Lower Zone, and people have adapted to it.

As described by a spirit, they are the legion of irresolute and ignorant souls who are not wicked enough to be sent to the Dark Abyss. Nevertheless, their state appears to them to be eternal. Only when they abandon their pride and greediness and plea for help from on high, will they be assisted to the gates of heaven.

Therefore, the purpose of the Lower Zone is not to punish, but to cleanse. The residue of a life spent in pursuit of wealth or pleasure, steeped in selfishness must be shorn off before a soul may enter heaven. Spirits locked in this zone soon learn the results of their life on earth, for now they are with people who have acted and believed like themselves. It is indeed an unpleasant lesson.

### **The Dark Abyss**

There is a worse place. And it is not meant to merely change your attitude. Since the people who find themselves drawn down into the abyss do not just have a problem with their approach and outlook, but their entire belief system. It is the opposite of the Golden Rule, others do unto you as you have done unto others.

Why is the Dark Abyss required? A spirit has the answer as the why there is a place such as this:



“For the same instructive reasons that God does not exterminate a human nation, when, insane with a thirst for domination, it unleashes cruel and destructive war; instead, he hands it over to the expiation of its crimes and to the misfortune it has brought upon itself, so that it can learn to become part of the eternal order that presides over universal life. Over the course of many centuries, the matter used by those intelligences is worked and restructured, just like in the earthly circles; but if the Lord visits humankind by means of sanctified individuals, he also corrects spirits by means of hardened or beastly ones.” <sup>[1]</sup>

In the Dark Abyss the inmates are in charge. The most hardened criminals who descended there exist to demonstrate that where people who share the same anti-beliefs, meaning anti-love, anti-charity, anti-selflessness and anti-fraternity conjugate, would create a society founded upon only the basest principles. The result of such a culture of hate and selfishness is the perfect location to learn how the world would appear and function if everyone followed the same ideals.

Hence the cities are usually commanded by sadistic rulers who torture and play with their minions with glee. These great warlords are constantly being replaced by others via intrigues and coups. There is no peace, only constant turmoil. As one would expect in a world populated by conniving and utterly selfish individuals.

To be sent to the Dark Abyss is to be thrown into a cauldron of your own creation. A spirit who demonstrated criminal and uncaring aspects while living is given their just desserts. They must exist in a world peopled like them. The spirit realm uses evil to fight evil.

Eventually, the wear and tear of always being on guard, lest another terror calls you, causes each soul to profound introspection of how they got there and what they must do to escape. For some, it could take thousands of years, for others weeks or months to complete the self-examination and raise up their hands and beg for help.

All will eventually escape. There is no eternal damnation. Only a severe way station on the long path to perfection.

### **The Earth's Heaven**

There are many ways to denote the levels of heaven circling the Earth. Spirits will describe these plateau's contrarily, depending on their level and who they are communicating with. Therefore, I will only use the hierarchy as described by the spirits who talked with the Reverend G. Vale Owen in the early twentieth century. And even they qualified their description by saying different spirits use different terms, but these were directionally correct.

These high spirits, many of them from the tenth level of heaven, layout what is above the Earth. It commences at the end of the Lower Zone with the first level. Each successive order is not just a boundary, but a transformation. As one climbs higher, a spirit loses matter and gains energy and other attributes. In essence, a spirit grows in wisdom, love, and power. All awarded only after earning the prize after each step.

Each level contains its own environment, cities, colleges, roads, and other infrastructure. Although within each step the terrain, and even the color of the sky may change. What is constant from one level to the next is that the light becomes brighter, more intense. So luminous that it causes discomfort to those who are not calibrated to it.

The light is not like an electric fence to keep others out, instead it is more of a natural progression of spiritual hierarchy. Similar, to the different layers of the ocean, each has its own creatures, accustomed to the pressure and the amount of diffused light. The brightness is most probably the result of the higher ratio of energy and the density of the love of God which permeates the universes.

It all ends at the tenth level. Beyond that, is where the real work commences. The circling layers above the earth are all part of the campus of Earth. All are involved in learning, doing, researching, and self-improvement. Whereas, leaving the tenth level is the true graduation, from college to the outside world, where you may put into practice that which you have learned.

### **The First Levels of Heaven**

Heaven starts at the first level. This and the next two levels are somewhat tied to the physical planet. Not physically connected but emotionally connected, in many ways. People residing in these levels retain

their old feelings on earthly matters – family, friends, nations, communities, religions, culture, hobbies, homes, favorite objects and so on. They concern themselves with the Earth and all that it entails but are not driven by it. The ability to let go of the material world, its possessions, its emotions, and passions is part of what constitutes the narrow door so aptly described by Jesus.

The spirit world has supplied us with descriptions of spirit colonies in the lower levels of heaven. The spirit Andre Luiz has communicated to the great Brazilian medium Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier about his colony Nosso Lar, above Rio de Janeiro in Brazil. The spirit Patricia, via the medium Vera Lucia Marinzeck da Carvalho, has detailed her chronical of waking up in the spirit colony of San Sebastian . Lastly, the mother of the Rev. G. Vale Owen told her son of her experiences in the colony, somewhere above England, she resided after her death. These are just some of the revelations of heaven that have come to us from the other side.

All are in agreement. The spirit colonies are wonderful, marvelous, happy, bright, and colorful, full of the nicest people imaginable, and normal. Normal, as in familiar, in the sense that there are cities, with people, roads, parks, buildings, city officials, rules, and organizations. Everything you would expect of a city on our planet, except a bit more – cleanliness, pleasing architecture, healthy citizens, as if type of perfection were washed over an earthly town.

The spirit universe understands us and our limitations. If parents suddenly took their five-year-old and dropped her or him onto a college campus, the poor young child would immediately be overwhelmed and cry. Instead, the child is introduced slowly into the atmosphere of the school. They are accustomed, by little steps, to the idea of learning and of discipline. Given the familiar presence of toys, stuffed animals, crayons, and games they are comfortable enough to intellectually grasp more.

It is no different with the newly passed over. The sense of normalness is there for a reason. Therefore, the colonies are laid out in familiar patterns, buildings are not gigantic mazes in which it is easy to get lost; transportation and signage is pervasive. It has the appearance of a clean, well ordered, beautiful city.

Let us take the experience of a spirit who has newly passed over. She had led an overall good life and she has earned the privilege of being assisted out of her body. She wakes up in a hospital-like room. The furniture is as expected, she knows she is not in intensive care because there are no machines attached to her body. She is groggy and believes she must have woken up from a slight fainting spell or a coma of no long duration. She can move every part of her body – she feels fine.

Nurses and doctors enter and smile at her, she does not recognize any of them. She wonders where her family is. She gets up and walks around the corridors. This place seems more like a convalescence home than a hospital.

She talks to another patient; they too are curious where they are at. The staff are so nice, but they tell them little of their condition. So, they wander around the grounds. The building is sparkling clean, the colors outside are brighter, the vegetation is all healthy and shaped to perfection. They think, this place must be expensive!

There is nothing they have seen to frighten them. In fact, it is all so relaxing, calm, and peaceful, that they do not mind staying, except they would like to know more about what happened to them and where is their family.

The mystery begins to end when a relative shows up in the room of our recently departed sister. She recognizes the person, her aunt, but she is taken aback because she remembers that her aunt had died in her old age, and that she now looks to be in her thirties. Her aunt smiles and tells her how happy she is to see her. The woman can sense the love coming from her aunt, but she can't quite get her feet onto reality – her aunt perished, but here she is, younger, healthier, radiant.

Finally, the aunt explains it all – she has passed over to the real world, the spirit world. Everything will be fine. The aunt invites her to explore the city with her in a few days after she has recovered a little more.

Walking out of the spiritual hospital, she encounters busy, yet smiling passers-by. People have something to do in the spirit world. There are jobs to be accomplished. She sees a monorail like train, taking the citizens of the community to and fro. She walks by gardens, where flowers of colors she has never seen before bloom. Ponds of crystalline blue waters circled by

manicured grass with fountains at either end. Water spouting, making an indescribable harmony, with a vibration that enters the soul and sends waves of calmness and love to everyone in the vicinity.

What lies beneath the surface, is that everything is alive, the trees, the fountains, the buildings – only that the people in the first levels do not yet seem to fully understand the true composition of all around them. They see the edifices and their mind flashes pictures of men and women toiling at construction. Those who have been residents longer and desired to be educated in the processes of the spirit world understand that thought created all they see, hear, and smell.

After a spell of rest and recuperation, our sister begins to see her new world more clearly. She has taken classes. She has learned to move by thought, called volitation in Spiritist literature. She does not need to use the public transportation any longer, she can visualize a destination, and either fly there rapidly at the speed of an idea in her head, or more leisurely, viewing the scenery as she zooms onwards toward her destination. There is no speed of light limitation in the spirit universe.

She understands that she no longer requires food; that absorbing light and air, and drinking water is enough to provide her with all the energy needed to power her less dense and more ethereal body.

After a time, she begins the educational process to utilize her mind and will power to create and shape objects. She is discovering that the world she belongs to is utterly fantastic, that hidden underneath the veneer of normal earthly human societal and cultural forms lies a constructed environment – led by high and powerful spirits – Angels who have descended to her level to guide and assist the populace of her city.

She is told the colony is guided by a spirit, appointed by higher authorities, who has been on the job for over two hundred years. Nosso Lar's governor (another spiritual colony), at the time of the communication about that city, had been on his assignment for one hundred and forty-four years.

Our newly arrived spirit is interested in the larger colony of Nosso Lar. She is told that Nosso Lar, is a colony above Rio de Janeiro, Brazil. It has over one million inhabitants. The governor has seventy-two ministers.

There are six departments, each with twelve ministers managing the day-to-day operations.

The departments are: Regeneration – where the planning and work associated with reincarnation is carried on. Assistance – a department that actively helps souls on earth to survive and prosper in their assigned life trials. Communication – messages that must be transferred from the spirit world to families and friends on earth are the territory of this ministry.

Elucidation – dedicated to the education of incarnates who are striving for spiritual knowledge. Elevation – a department which sets its sights on the levels of heaven above. Divine Union – another department which manages the orders, communications, and traffic between Nosso Lar and heavenly groups above their level.

All these ministries must be staffed. There are tasks to be accomplished, reports to be furnished, analysis to be completed; it takes effort. Not manual, but intellectual effort by trained spirits.

Imagine working in a department where there are no politics, no back biting, and no layoffs. Where you are engaged in interesting endeavors. And as an added bonus, what you are doing is helping others. This is the serving aspect of heaven.

Everyone in heaven has their free will. Therefore, if you do not wish to work, you do not have to. You can live a life of leisure, if you so please. But to partake of all the benefits of the level you reside, the authorities in heaven, ask that you pay with what you earned in your employment.

In the astral cities of Nosso Lar and San Sebastian, they use the concept of the bonus-hour. For every hour one works, a person receives a one bonus-hour credit. The only people making more are in professions like teaching and childcare. And that may be only double pay. This method may be different for other colonies in the lower levels.

The primary aspect is the egalitarian value of work. Everyone is valued almost equally. While at the same time, a spirit is rewarded for their hours spent in the service of others. With this remuneration, a spirit may go to a show, a lecture, a movie, or live in a house they may call their own, and other luxuries.

Without, any bonus hours, a spirit will still have a place to rest and relax and be able to enjoy the surroundings of the city. All are taken care of, but for those who work more is given.

Therefore, heaven is not the Elysian Fields, mindless relaxation and contemplation for all eternity. Instead, it is an extension of what we are used to, hours filled with projects and responsibilities. Interspersed with intellectual pursuits, for self-improvement, and time set aside for rest and travel to different colonies or to see the sights of the natural beauty of heaven.

There are large oceans, mountain ranges, and varieties of environments in heaven. They are as extended as our and other spirits imagination can provide.

### **Higher Levels of Heaven**

As one rises from one glorious level to the next, the light becomes brighter. The love of God is more intense. The ratio of energy to matter is higher for spirits. Spirits who inhabit each level influence their surroundings. Therefore, the higher plateaus of heaven are more imaginative, more colorful, more alive, and more daring.

The architecture leaves behind their earthly parameters and enter idealized forms of beauty. One city in the fifth level is circled by a wall of liquid stone, which shines forth and will change hues depending upon who is coming through one of the gates.

There are sentries on the lookout for any new visitors, travelling by land or air. The countryside around the city are fields and houses. Horses and other domesticated animals go about their business, such as pulling carts, in a happy exuberance.

Carts, wagons, chariots, and other devices are used for transportation, not because it is needed, but because it is desired. A renaissance fair, with no repellent smells or dirt, nor drunk participants, would be an apt image. People riding in carriages, enjoying the country pleasures and each other's company is but one part of the higher levels.

Cities are magnificent, with large halls for meetings, expansive parks, fountains which sing, and facilities for research and the running of the city

and the dependent towns on the outskirts.

The Palace of the Great Lord of the city was large and ornate. One entered it via a porch, and the stones of the walls also shone forth in colors, but unlike the city walls, the liquid stone changed hues constantly, forming beautiful patterns. The immense central hall was supported by twenty-two columns built of liquid stones. Seldom were two of the columns of the same pattern and color. On top was a dome of crystal.

Outside of the city, there sits, at the crossroads of three cities, on a broad level plane circled by a forest, a temple. The temple sits upon a tall rock formation, like a granite cylinder. High ministers will gather multitudes from the nearby cities to stand in the glade to worship. At times, Christ will appear on the temple steps to present to the gathering below.

Spirits describe grand congregations with thousands of souls assembled to hear words of wisdom and inspiration, or to attend an important ceremony. People will journey from the major cities to take part in these functions. Spirits tells us that the mood is always joyful, and the feeling of love permeates everything.

On an even grander scale there is a city on the tenth level of heaven, it is a place of learning – The University of Five Towers. There are huge expanses of lakes and forests interweaved throughout the college city. The is a grand Dome, a Great Tower, and Four Towers.

The Four Towers each has its own particular area of study. The first is the Tower of Sleeping life, which concerns itself with mineral life. The second is the Tower of Dreaming Life, which deals with plant life. The third is the Tower of Waking Life, which covers animal life. The fourth is the Tower of Consciousness, which is the study of free willed human life.

The Great Tower is the Tower of Angelic Life, which watches over all other forms of life and manages their evolution and progress toward perfection. The library center of the university is the Dome House.

The architecture of the Great Tower displays its importance. It is a flowing edifice, built of four double walls, with balconies, full of vegetation. Curved skywalks attach different areas. Spaces comprising of small parks seem to float in the air. They are positioned so sunlight always pours into each region, even the ground floors are basked in light.



This center of learning was completely built by thought. By teams of angels, high spirits working together to implement a shared creative vision. These cities in heaven experience no decay, no decomposition, no rust, cracks, or imperfections of any kind. They will stand for all eternity, if the ruling spirits determine they should do so, or they may be dismantled and rebuilt according to the desires of advanced spirits.

Houses in the higher levels of heaven may be constructed by the thoughts of those who wish to live within them. There is a story of a kind, spiritual, and beneficent couple, who lived together in England. He was a country squire; he and his wife treated their tenants with respect, and they sought the best for everyone in their purview. They had a large and comfortable squire's house in the physical plane. In heaven, their abode was grander and had extensive gardens and fountains circling the mansion. There was a dock in front, with a lake that one could not see the next shore. Others lived there too, taking the opportunity to learn from the spiritual dedication and experience from the couple.

Hence, the span of variety in the higher levels of Earth's heaven is considerable. One will find houses, farms, campuses, cities, and other types of buildings fulfilling a vast range of functions. While the scenery and the environment are diverse, the one constant is the warmth of the people.

What makes heaven a paradise is not merely the landscape, style of homes and halls, the constant perfect temperature – it is the spirits in residence. Each and every one of them has travelled through an arduous and difficult process of self-improvement to be able to enter that elite location. All who live there share a common experience of many lives, many lessons, countless dramas, and wrongs committed, numerous atonements and periods of deep self-analysis and reflection to attain the summit where one's mind can create.

It is this act of creation, via thought, that should cause us to fully comprehend the rocky roads we have journeyed. Only by iron discipline and constant re-tooling of our habits, may we re-wire our brain to modify our personality and character to achieve the required state of intelligence, love, knowledge, and foresight combined with wisdom to be able to open the gate to the higher levels of Heaven.





## **Chapter 3 – Christ**

Jesus Christ, the prophet from Nazareth, the marvelous person who brought us the concepts of forgiveness, charity, and fraternity during the time of the emperors Augustus and his stepson Tiberias in Rome, is not the subject of this chapter.

There are countless other tomes describing and exploring the story of Jesus, in human form, during His short, but impactful, duration on Earth. That He was a poor carpenter, who brought an enlightened philosophy, which dramatically changed the world over the course of centuries, is without question.

The Christ the world knows is but a small subset of the true Christ. Christ the immortal spirit, is a pure spirit of untold energy and power. His exact composition is even unknown to those residents at the tenth level of heaven. They report that He lives at a level so far above them as to make the difference between their exalted level and our level on Earth to be insignificant. Nevertheless, He has appeared as one of us. Nothing so close to God has ever been on our planet before. Little wonder that his mere presence, words, and deeds revolutionized mankind's culture and morals forever.

### **My Kingdom is not of This World**

And Jesus said, 'I am, and you will see the Son of Man seated at the right hand of Power, and coming with the clouds of heaven.' Mark 14:62, Matthew 26:64

The right hand of power: What does this mean? What was this power he was reported to have said? Spirits, via the messages from Spiritist mediums have started to pull back the veil of the other side and have revealed the extent of His power.

A peek at His influence was given to us by two sources, one from the spirit Emmanuel, the spirit guide to Chico Xavier in Brazil, and the other from the spirit Arnel, who communicated to the Rev. G. Vale Owen in Britain. Chico received his messages in the 1950s and the Rev. G. Vale Owen in the beginnings of the 20<sup>th</sup> century.

Jesus is either the leader or a member of the “Council of High Powers”, His position in the council and the names differ slightly from one source to the other, most probably depending on the difficulty of comparing native English to a translation from Portuguese.

The High Council is a body composed of pure spirits who are responsible for an area of the Spirit Universe and its corresponding portion of a physical universe. What is the territory under their supervision is yet unknown.

The council congregates and makes decisions for vast reaches of planets. Planets on various levels of spiritual ascendancy. Spirits talk of eons or of ages, epochs which span thousand, or tens of thousands of years between meetings. The council reviews groups of planets which are on a similar spiritual level. They desire to examine the progress of like planets in relation to each other and to their possible interaction with other groups of planets on an inferior and superior level.

They review the history and the plan forward for each sphere. The council met in the vicinity of Earth, when our solar system was scheduled to be formed, and next when Jesus was planning to come to our planet. The last meeting held near Earth was in 1969, when humans went to the moon.

This group is responsible for the collective and continuous improvement for a vast area of spiritual and physical space. Possibly thousands of solar systems, hundreds of thousands of planets, and trillions of spirits, free willed human and human-like souls are under their command.

Imagine what I just revealed to you. It is as if you lived in a small village, but you never knew who your ruler was. You thought you were on your own, that the crops you grew, the trees you cut down to make your house, the animals you raised were random gifts. That they were all there for the taking. Then, you learned that each and everything you touched or utilized was the creation of a Supreme Overlord, that you, in fact were under their direct command. That nothing, even the air you breathe, was possible without the knowing direction of the High Lords.

Everything you knew before was invalidated. Your position in the village, your possessions, and your family had to be reassessed. Instead of

being an important gear in the daily working of the town, you are now a mite, a bit of dust.

This realization is why the great Spiritist medium Francisco C. (Chico) Xavier when he was autographing books one day, signed his name “cisco” – meaning a speck or a grain of sand in Portuguese. A lady bought one of his books and had Chico sign it, she left and then looked at the signature. Instead of “Chico” she read “cisco”, she returned and asked Chico “Why did you sign your name Cisco?” Chico answered, “Because that is how I feel.”

Previously, you believed your small universe operated under the false assumption that you and your fellow citizens were alone and isolated. Suddenly, you learned the truth, that you are interconnected with everything else, and that you have a guided future. A detailed work map of where you have been and where you are going. That a higher authority constantly analyzes you to determine the next steps, even though each step could span centuries.

The power and majesty of such a governing body and your immediate leader must be immense. Force at their fingertips must be greater than your imagination. Your individual desires and the collective wishes of your fellow citizens are washed away in the tidal wave that is your collective destiny. Nevertheless, each person has an inalienable right of freewill. Every individual has the freedom of thought and action, although the environment and changing scenery is not under your control.

This should be the effect of my description of the power of Christ. He is the power and the glory. He is the leader, the Man, the Father of Man, and for a short time the Son of Man, during his sojourn on Earth. Essentially, He is our Creator, under the Divine Orders of God.

To our point of reference, Christ does sit at the side of God. But our field of view is too narrow. While Christ is our leader in our corner of the universe(s), there are others, equal to and superior to Christ who rule in other sections of God’s supra-universe.

### **Our Governor**

Now that our Leader, our Chief Executive, our Lord has been placed in rough context, who and what is Christ?

First let us put his composition in context. The spirit Arnel related an encounter he had with Christ. Arnel was in a great hall, a tall spirit marched down the center aisle with a Child on his shoulder, that Child was Christ, manifested as the Christ Child for the special occasion of Christmas Eve. As the Child, carried by the larger spirit, passed each soul, Christ gave a small flower, pansy-like. Arnel said that he handed the pansy to each person because if Christ directly touched them, the energy contained within Jesus would have annihilated them. Hence, the flower was used as an insulator between untold pure energy and the composition of energy and matter of a spirit in the realm of heaven circling the Earth.

Arnel states that as he held the tiny flower for just a few seconds, he felt that Christ knew him and loved him, and that he was special above all the rest. Moreover, Arnel had been wrestling with a complex problem for quite a while, but in that instant, as Christ held one end of the flower and Arnel held the other, the answer came to him. Arnel later learned that each person who was handed a pansy by Christ felt the same type of sensations and each received some sort of enlightenment.

Imagine the feeling of love so powerful, as to instantly create a deep connection, where you feel acceptance, approval, and understanding all at once. Where you feel absorbed in the body of Christ which, to you, was unique. Where your mind ran a thousand frames per second and solved a vexing problem. All occurring simultaneously.

In a few moments, one high spirit, changed your outlook. You felt a connection to an exalted purpose. Such is the power of Jesus in the spirit realm.

### **The Appearance of Christ**

Arnel notifies us that our image of Christ as portrayed in numerous paintings is but one aspect. He tells us that he has never seen Christ manifest himself as the exact same figure. Each occasion, where he has been lucky enough to view Jesus, Christ has appeared differently.

The minute details of His body and face may change, great or small depending upon the effect and desired purpose of His mission. But one seemingly constant is His regal bearing. Essentially, He combined the appearance of a sufferer, but with the face of a king, a king who had fought

hard to secure and guide his kingdom. He was majestic with the countenance of a great warrior, tempered with immense love. His struggle on the cross was somehow written into His expression, while displaying immense power and force of will.

Arnel states that he never saw Christ with a beard, as so often depicted in our physical world.

In one manifestation, Christ wore a tunic of liquid green, which extended to His knees. His tunic left His arms bare, on which He wore no jewelry. In the middle of His tunic was a belt, held tight by a clasp which was a flashing blood red stone. The clasp was resting mid-way between His hips. The stone symbolized the constant connection between Christ and the higher levels, where God commands and high lord spirits fly off to their appointed tasks.

In another appearance, a mantle composed of rays of green, blue, and amber, gently floated down and set itself around His shoulders. As it rested upon His body, it became a deep dark blue, which shone, with a gold outside edging. On the inside the pattern on the edge was bolder, with gold, silver, green, with crimson and amber in two broad lines on the inner boundary. The symbol of an upside-down crown was spaced upon the cloth of the mantle.

The collar of the mantle, spreading out to form epaulettes, of a dark pearl hue which radiated and formed a frame about His head. On His head was a circlet, not a crown, but a band of red and white, which bound His hair behind His ears.

Christ in His true home is our Leader, the guiding light of humanity. He is the great Teacher and as such possesses the power to appear as His will dictates. Each demonstration has a purpose, for He wastes no effort on meaningless displays. On the contrary, each step He takes is with one goal in mind, the evolution of our spirit life on Earth, and other planets under His command, toward perfection.

### **The Home of Christ**

Sublimity. While we, here on our planet, live in an objective world, where we must deal with things as they are, not as we desire them to be.

The heavens about us are subjective, where our minds may shape the environment. There is a level above all. A level described as sublime.

Spirits report that as we humans on Earth are physical, then we transform into spiritual beings after leaving our dense bodies, that after eons of hard work and of character transformation, there is something more. A spirit essence which is greater than spirit, which encompasses spirit and beyond – a sublime essence.

Spirits who have communicated with the Rev. G. Vale Owen, talk of the ten spheres of Heaven surrounding the Earth. They state their numbering system is arbitrary and other spirits may speak of the levels in a different manner. The central point is that after the tenth level, a spirit becomes part of a greater range of heaven. What that is, has not yet been revealed to us.

A spirit, communicating from the eleventh level, reports that they know only of the levels up to the fourteenth. That they surmise Jesus may reside on the fifteenth level. The language used to describe the fifteenth level implies that it contains within itself all inferior levels. And the bounds of the fifteenth level is unknown to them.

This implies a hierarchical and structured order, like a database which contains all tables within it. A set of static and dynamic data points, all interacting with each other, densely packed, yet grouped logically – resulting in a complex entity of moveable logical components, which seem to have a physical and informational purpose flowing endlessly within a realm of cosmic fluid.

Each droplet of fluid knows it is owned by the top of the structure and exists only inside that environment by the will of the High Lord commanding it. It is this combination of pure energy plus Universal Fluid, which is the transmitter of the flow of wills from superior spirits – guided by the orders of our Christ.

It is inside this created universe – spirit and physical – that each of us reside. We are all part of this manifested environment. Our personalities exist, learn, grow, travel, and flow from one destination to another, always in touch with the spiritual guidance of Christ and of God.

Christ is part of the highest glory that lies next to God. An existence on a plane of such purity and power to be as a bright white light to a cave



dweller. An object of incomprehension, but at the same moment recognized as an overwhelming entity.

Spirits have told us, that if one sees Christ from afar, one does not detect just Christ, but the sum of the spiritual brightness of all His subjects. That each one of us adds or subtracts from the total rays of His existence.

They liken it to seeing a star in a far-off part of our galaxy. The greater the size of the sun, the brighter it appears. Whereas the sun is bright because of the amount of energy of the orb, Christ's luminosity is accentuated because of the collective shine of His subjects.

Hence, we are all truly part of Christ. We are part of His glory. We are indivisible from Him. Inside our character and personality, there will be for all eternity some portion of Jesus. Our DNA will always be mixed with His. Even billions of years from now, when we may associate ourselves with a different Christ like spirit, we shall always be marked with the sign of our Christ.

Therefore, the fact that He came to Earth is miraculous. The prophets and angels who visited Earth before and after Him, were originally composed of a different set of energy and matter. They were all of inferior composition. As are we.

Hence, as we stubborn humans on Earth rebel against the dictates of anyone who dares to believe themselves superior to us – which causes us thousands of years and countless lives of trouble – we should stop and ponder for a moment upon the true aspect of Christ.

We instinctively know we cannot defeat a tidal wave or survive a fall from a great cliff – but we think we can safely ignore the repeated messages from a being who is so far above us as to be, from our perspective, indistinguishable from God.

Christ lives and reigns in a place above the heavens surrounding the Earth. From that perch, He commands planets and all life, spirit and physical, for each sphere. We, as a collective, will travel in the direction He chooses, and the enjoyment of the journey is up to our degree of cooperation.

### **Ceremonies of Christ**

Many visualize Christ, after He returned to Heaven from dying on the cross, as sitting on a throne shouting out orders. I am sure, there are instances of Jesus leading a quorum of ministers, with full discussions and setting out directions to each one. On the other hand, there exist the small informal appearances amongst His subjects. For Christ is ever cognizant of the state of His kingdom.

One such example occurred on a lower level of heaven. A team of spirits who were in command of determining the level of heaven that spirits should be sent after they had either passed away or climbed up from the Lower Zone, had been experiencing disappointment. Many of the assignments had proved to be slightly incorrect. They had misjudged the capacity of the individuals in question.

Their leader brought them into a meeting and conveyed a message of hope. He told them to not be discouraged, for Christ had also felt disheartened, attempting to teach us on Earth. Nevertheless, He carried on, by looking to God and asking for assistance.

While the manager of the group was speaking, he began to appear in his true form, a brighter angel from a superior sphere. Imposed upon this new vision, came another. A cloud surrounded the angel and the image of Christ enveloping him in His majesty. The team members looked upon Christ and felt that He was with them in their difficult task. That He would never abandon them.

Slowly, Christ's image receded, and the angel manager remained. From that short display of love and support, each participant gained new strength.

On a grander scale, Christ is the Master of Ceremonies, for sizable crowds. In sphere ten, there is an imposing mountain, which rises dramatically out of flat grasslands. There are small buildings and places of worship on the slope of the mountain. On the top is a temple – The Temple of the Holy Mount. The temple can be viewed by spectators on the level plain.

On this occasion, the crowds stood facing the temple on the ground below, for over a half mile from the base of the mountain. Thousands upon thousands of advanced spirits – for only spirits who could accustom

themselves to the brightness and purity of the tenth level could withstand the conditions of this exalted sphere.

They stood in groups, denoted by the color of their garments and the jewel of the order they wore. The hues of one phalanx transitioned to the other, like the rolling waves of an ocean. Each crest a slightly altered color depending upon the angle of the sun and composition and density of the water.

These able spirits were present to witness a graduation ceremony. For those who have worked and studied diligently were to be singled out so they could be raised to the eleventh sphere of heaven. They did not know who was to be selected. For there is no time limit from one grade to another in heaven: only the demonstration of merit.

Anxiously awaiting, they saw Christ emerge from the gate of the temple. He was radiant. He wore a narrow band of gold cloth around His head. His sandals matched the gold about His hair. Dividing his white glowing tunic, He wore a belt, from which crimson rays shown forth. In his right hand he held a golden cup.

While Christ may appear in different manifestations, all knew the look of absolute love, kindness, sorrow, and joy that combined into a paternal royalty. His mere presence bestows a blessing for anyone present. Spirits in the audience described Him as sweet and lovely.

Christ peered out upon the assembly. As if he was looking beyond them, into the great expanses of the spirit universe.

Jesus was not alone, His ministers arrayed themselves beside and below Him. Each high angel in attendance had a distinct face and personality. Every spirit's aspect had been carved by their own journey of tears, trials, hardships, disappoints, joys, and victories. Resulting in a unique combination fashioned by countless lives on many planets.

On cue they all rose into the air, His ministers formed a living circle around Him. Suspended high away from the side of the temple gate, Jesus dipped His golden cup and with His other hand gave the crowd the sign of the benediction. Out of the chalice a stream of multi-colored light fell. Like a waterfall from high on the mountain, it poured down into the plain.

The light moved as if liquid, settling on the level ground, lapping gently on the feet of the multitude below. The light, gold, green, blue, and countless other hues seem to penetrate the ground beneath each person on the plain and create a new floor of shining glass.

Then the crowd noticed differences. For some the light did not stop at the soles, but started to display a yellow tint, until it created a curtain of transparent gold around the selected few. Circling their heads, a band of eleven stars floated. Until it landed, creating a band tying their hair just above their ears.

Slowly the sea of light dissipated. The assembly was once again standing on the plain. But those who had been selected had been altered. Changed forever in their basic composition, to make them fit for entry into the eleventh sphere.

Next, a great bridge made from light materialized from the gate of the temple. It formed stairs to the crowd below. Those who were chosen were requested to come forward and climb up.

Jesus spoke to the grand congress. Everyone could hear him perfectly, for he communicated directly to each mind. Christ said.

“You have done well, my children very much beloved, in what duty has been given into your hands to do. Not perfectly have you served the Father and Me; but as you were able, so you did your work. I ask no more than you do after this manner in the wider sphere of service into which I now call you. Come up to Me, therefore, My beloved, and I will show you the path into that higher place where your houses await you all ready, and many friends to welcome you whom you will find there. Come up to Me.” <sup>[2]</sup>

This ceremony, composed of the superior spirits under the command of Christ, displayed the power and majesty of His position. The liquid light, the ministers surrounding Him, were not there for show – to illustrate his command over all in attendance. Unlike, on our planet, where usually the aim is to cement the position of those in authority, so they cannot be thrown out for incompetence. The aim of singling out and celebrating the individual’s successes in graduating to the next level is to genuinely reward

the perseverance of the chosen few and to motivate the others, that they too, may someday rise to a higher position.

Each public appearance is always a teaching moment for Christ. By His example He demonstrates the determination and dedication to be a leader of planets and men. Even in His speech to the graduates, He mentions the word “perfectly”. Why? Because to become perfect – to be a perfected spirit – is our goal. Christ points out, that while many have striven gallantly, the state of perfection is not yet attained. Additional effort will be required.

### **Christ Teaching in the Spirit Realm**

The quest for perfection – approaching the perfection of God – but never obtaining it, is the path for each of us. The pursuit of flawlessness is a mission which spans millennia. It is this path that Christ serves as a teacher and as an example to everyone.

A group of spirits, who had been given a mission to rescue souls enslaved in the Lower Zone, were welcomed back into heaven. They had endured tremendous struggles and hardships. They were met with constant opposition in their quest to free trapped spirits in cities of gloom, led by cruel warlords.

They arrived at a temple and stood in the back. A high spirit came and led them to the front. They were recognized by Christ for their bravery and dedication in assisting thousands of souls from the depths of despair to start their journey toward the light. Christ, standing in front, flanked by seven angels, spoke to the congregation and to the group:

“And you who have been down into the outlands of gloom, know you that I am there also. Manifest to those, My strayed ones, I may not be, except in part and seldom. But when I had penetrated to the outer realms of My Father’s expression of Himself, then, before returning this way onward, I went, as you have done, and spoke to many people, and they awoke to hear my voice, and a large number set their faces forward towards these realms. But some there were who turned away from Me to darker spheres, because they might not endure the sense of the Presence of Me, which at that time became intensified in the atmosphere of those regions, and should so remain. You did not reach

so far as to the refuge of those who fled from Me then. But I am there with them also, and they shall be here with Me some day.

But now, My own and earnest missionaries, you have been afoot of My business, and I have noted your work from My own place. You have not come forth of your battle without scathe. They gave me wounds also. You have not in everything been given due credence for your honesty of purpose in your calling of men into the sunlight of these spheres. Of Me also they said I did not well but evil. Your hearts have sometimes been very full of pain when you beheld the pangs of our brethren in those drear lands. And at time you have stooped to wonder why the Father is so called – times when most the anguish of others bore you down with its millstone of woe, and crushed you nearly. My beloved and fellow-laborers in those far fields, remember how I, too, as in all things else, so in this, plumbed the depths of human experiences. I, too, knew darkness when His face was turned away.” <sup>[3]</sup>

There is so much to discover in Christ’s short speech. First, when Christ describes the Lower Zone as the outward regions of His Father’s expression, He was describing the universe as beginning with God. With God as the nucleus. God’s love, most intensive at the center, but nevertheless radiating outwards in all directions. Even to those areas where spirits, always with their free will, do their best to deny and block out the love which penetrates everything.

Christ taught that He also journeyed to the far regions, where light is dim, and spirits are ignorant and stubborn. He not only placed Himself in the role of bringing sustenance to needy spirits, but also revealed that He too attempted to change people by persuasion, not force. For Christ, being extremely powerful, could have easily dominated the suffering spirits in the Dark Abyss and modify their beliefs with a few thoughts sent their way. Instead, He respected their free will. Knowing that treating people like programmable robots, will only result in limited, uncaring, and cold automatons, who will not have the attributes required to become an effective high spirit.

Hence, Christ exposed the need for our individual trials. Sometimes they are hellish experiences, others reek of boredom, with interludes of little

slivers of joys – all essential for us to learn, while maintaining our unique personalities.

Christ mentioned some spirits could not endure His presence. Which reveals that the mere proximity of a good spirit affects lower spirits. These poor souls, trapped in a loop of jealousy, anger, and hate, are frail beings who feel intense pain, when goodness begins to penetrate their outer shell. They feel real agony as their ever-present set of Divine Laws, embedded into each of us, are activated by thoughts of a higher calling. Acting like acid burning away impurities.

These fleeing spirits are not forgotten. Christ says that they will one day return to His fold. Christ exposes the need of spirits, who deny a likelihood of a Kingdom of Love, to spend time in a Kingdom of Despair, so they shall one day make their own decision, that there must be more to life than absolute dreariness.

The slings and arrows of the non-believers and the scoffers are noted by Christ when He mentions that people believed Him to be evil instead of a force for good. So many individuals, reject any hint of a life that should be regulated by divine moral principles. They do not wish to be reminded of their own doubts, and thusly they project the remorse of their own conduct through transforming the example of light to be instead of darkness. Trying to salve the gaping wounds caused by denying their own consciences.

The questioning of how God could allow such evil to reign upon the earth is cited by Christ. He is telling us that it is natural to be discouraged and disillusioned by sights of torment. Then He uses Himself as an example of one who had to travel through the depths of despair in order to rise to the splendid level He has attained.

Christ in a few sentences, proclaims God's plan to allow us to journey through a literal hell, on Earth and in the spirit world, to be part of our crucial path toward perfection. Only the white-hot fires of adversity can mold a character that can withstand any trial and rise to glory after glory.

Our moral and character improvement is but one factor in the spirit realm under the leadership of Christ. We must learn the intricacies of the environment in which we reside. While thought is action in the spirit universe, the method and use of thought needs to be learned.

Then there is the question of creation. How does the orders from God to High Angel Lords to high spirits to spirits flow? How are solar systems and planets formed? How is life guided in each new orb? All these processes and procedures must be acquired so a spirit may contribute to the continual flow of newly created spirits and the campuses which must house them in their spiritual infancy.

To accomplish this task schools, colleges, and universities are populated on each level of heaven. Christ makes appearances to bring real-life examples to classroom lectures.

In sphere ten in the University of Five Towers, Christ organized an exhibition of the application of what has been taught. His heralds announced his arrival. Christ used the Tower of the Angels to open a portal to a huge convention which displayed every type of creation and process of creation in the universe, so the students could examine the future which awaits them. Here is what one spirit reported as he stood in the crowd:

“And, as we sang, the whole building began first to vibrate and then to dissolve, and pass away. And the Angels, who had been about its walls and arches, now formed groups, who stood, each in order, in front of his own great company, which stretched away behind him into space. For the whole heavens were filled with innumerable companies of men of different race, and animals; and all creation was there around us.

We saw the spirits of men who were in the animal stage, and others, in all degrees of progress up to the state at present reached on the foremost of the planets. We saw all forms of animal life, both of land and air, and sea-creatures in all their degrees of development also, from simple to complex form and organism.

And we saw those angelic beings, also in all their degrees of splendor, who had charge of peoples and nations, and of animals and plants in all their variety of order. These Hierarchies were most sublime, for we saw them in massed grandeur, and those who had been stationed about the Crown were now observed to have taken their places as members of those groups to which they each belonged.” <sup>[4]</sup>

After multiple demonstrations, the students could walk among the various departments and examine closely and converse with the members of



the creative groups. The spirit reported:

“For the time we were no longer denizens of the Tenth Sphere, but of the whole Universe, and wandered about among its continents and down the vistas of its ages, and spoke with those who planned and those who wrought in that great workshop of God. And many things new we learned, and each new thing was a joy such as only those may know who themselves come so near to creatorship as we who were now receiving an advanced lesson in our school, in order that we, even as these Mighty Ones, should go forth to do as they had done so wonderfully, yes, even those who had made a worm or a thorn.” <sup>[5]</sup>

Christ is not just our moral leader, or the governor of our planet. He is the university president, the chancellor of our school district. Husbanding young and immature souls, from their first steps, to teaching them to socialize with others, to their first rudimentary education, to actionable knowledge, to post graduate studies.

He prepares them for the real mission. That of actively assisting other campuses in their quest to shepherd souls from infancy to adulthood. To someday, after years and years of trials, to become a productive member of spirit society. Christ organized this demonstration at the University of Five Towers to excite and motivate students to what their years of sweat and blood had produced. A chance to become a minor god, a creator of life in the universe.

While Christ guides the heavens around the Earth collectively, He also involves Himself with assisting everyone in their quest to achieve their missions.

The spirit Arnel spoke to the Rev. G. Vale Owen, about the planning for an important mission to Earth. He and many other spirits gathered on a parkland near the Tower of the Angels in the City of the Five Towers. When slowly, angels of high degree began making themselves visible to the audience. As they took their places a cross rose, then another high angel came and leaned on the cross and made this speech:

“We have called you, my comrades, that you should hear the message of Him Who draws near this State in order that at His advent and His

passing you understand what those should be to you and lose no blessing.

Know you, therefore, who have seen Him times again that now He comes in other guise. As you have seen Him hitherto, He came for some one purpose or another, in special phase of person, as special need required. Now He comes, not in His fullness truly, yet in much greater fullness of majesty than sometimes He came. For then He descended to you upon His business peculiar. Now He comes with the mandate of His Father to the work.

It is an emprise of great moment, for earth is in sore need of you to help. When therefore He passes by you, do you, each and every one of you, bespeak of Him what qualities you most do lack. So shall you become attuned to the task in hand and strengthened to its accomplishment.

Be not unready, nor overawed too much, of His glory. He brings it for you. Himself has no such need. It is for you He comes all-glorious, and the beams of His radiance are for you. Bathe you in them, therefore, and appropriate to your use what of strength and ennoblement they carry in their magnetic forces.

Now make for yourselves small companies for friendly conversation. Speak one to another of what I have said to you. My words to you have been few. Make them into many. And where you stick these my companions will help you to resolve your difficulty. So, shall you be at ease the more when He shortly comes and, while He passes, you, seeing and hearing and feeling, shall also understand.” <sup>[6]</sup>

Arnel met with his friends and consulted with the Angels amongst them to be ready for Christ’s arrival. The group waited patiently. They watched a mountain range in the distance. Its normal lighting was crystal-bright in a green-golden hue. When the light beaming down upon the mountains turned to red-gold and waves of colors rippled through the atmosphere, everyone knew that Jesus was coming.

When the heralds with Christ came before their Master, they hovered over the gathering below. A preparatory phase commenced, as explained by Arnel:

“The company passed forward, therefore, into the condition of our State and filled the whole firmament with their light and glory. They did not descend among us, these. They hovered above, dropping upon us of the dew of their sweetness and peace, so light as kisses wafted to us on a summer breeze, but full of power, and charged with understanding of mysteries very deep and holy. As these tokens of their love fell upon us we became enlightened in matters hitherto beyond our range, and so were made more competent for our work.” [7]

Spirits on a mission were gifted additional knowledge and power. Extra mental capacity to make them ready for when Jesus arrived. Arnel describes what occurred as Christ appeared in their midst:

“His circumambient radiance increased in its brightness and expansion until we were all enveloped within it. I could see my companions even to the farthest bounds quite clearly. But all the air was tinted rosy gold. Our bodies also were bathed in its liquid flood. So, He enveloped us whole and several. It was within His Presence and Personality we stood, and we felt not it but Him in and around us. We were in, and parts of, the Christ. And yet, although He thus became universal to us, He did not eschew to appear in outer form.

I saw Him as He moved about, above and among us. It is very hard to tell you, He seemed to be everywhere at one time in His bodily, localized form, and yet there was but one of Him. I cannot say it better, and it is not very well said, forsooth. So, He appeared to us. I doubt me much He was not seen in detail of character by each one of us identically. To me He appeared as I will tell you.

He was very large of stature, some two men high, but He did not seem so. To say ‘giant’ would be to say a wrong idea in total. He was just man, but man ennobled in aspect as in build. Very well. Then upon His head He wore a crown, just a broad band of continuous blending with ruby-stone and metal of gold alternate. Their rays were not intermingled, but the ruby rays were red and the gold rays were golden. These went upward, ever expanding, into the heavens and were caught upon the robes of those who hovered there which became much beautified by them.” [8]

His aura filled all available space. The very air was infused with His presence – hence He permeated the entire park and at the same time was recognizable in form. The immediate effect of His presence was electric to all ... far beyond what we could experience on earth by being in the presence of the most talented, revered, or famous person.

Jesus not only spread power but covered all, like a blanket, with his boundless aura. An impression that raised consciousness and feelings so that never before had life been so in focus and inner determination so strong.

Each spirit was touched. Each spirit was fortified with immense energy and given what they had believed was lacking within them, so they could carry out the mission assigned.

This is Christ in action. This is how the leader of our planet works to our advantage. By managing, motivating, supplying that what is required, planning, analyzing, and educating His flock, so they will be able to rise in the spirit hierarchy.

### **The Ministers of Christ**

Some of the ministers of Christ are household names – Buddha, Zoroaster, and Socrates. Religious scholars have written extensive books discussing why the messages of the prophets throughout our history have similar themes, even though communication was highly restricted during ancient times. The answer was always in plain sight. They all came from the same organization and they were all sent by Christ.

This makes perfect sense once we accept that Christ is the Governor of our planet. He has diligently been sending down envoys to the physical plane for thousands of years. Each time, trying to spread the word of love, charity, and fraternity to humanity.

These ministers have important duties. We have not yet been allowed to know the exact title and area of responsibility for each of His ministers, or their number.

We do know that one of Jesus' ministers, Antulio, is one of the grand instructors for the physical and spiritual evolution of the planet. Another

minister, who was not named, oversees the biological evolution of the planet. While a separate minister is the head of the geography of the planet.

The minister for sociological progress is Hilel. It was he who chose Brazil to become the cradle to spread Spiritism throughout the world. Even though, the Doctrine of Spiritism was codified by Allan Kardec in France, where it briefly rose and then flamed out, by the assiduous efforts of organized religion.

In the book *Brazil, Heart of the World, Patron of the Gospel* (not currently translated into English), there is a dialogue between Jesus and Hilel; they are discussing where to put the pioneers from the west into the new world where they can establish a new location to build Spiritism for the future. Jesus asks Hilel where in the new world would he suggest and Hilel answered that South America is wonderful and charming and that the place which later would be known as Brazil is an ideal spot. A perfect country from which to evangelize the rest of the world with piety and faith.

Therefore, it is not only Christ that creates detailed plans for our future, but a collective effort to set goals, form groups to flesh out the details of the plan, then to carry out the project with dedicated teams of spirits.

Diving deeper into the strategy for sociological progress, the minister Hilel, must have had an organization to implant and to grow Spiritism in Brazil. This organization arranged the evangelization of Brazil by Dr. Bezerra de Menezes and planned the birth of Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier at the beginning of the twentieth century. Chico would live to write more than 450 books, before his death in 2002. Chico's books were the catalyst to cement the rise of Spiritism in Brazil.

Following the chain of command down, during a medium's meeting I was told that Ishmael (of the Old Testament fame – the first son of Abraham) was the spirit responsible for spreading Spiritism in the New World. And he was present at the meeting. Hence, Spiritists who have managed Spiritist Centers, gave talks about Spiritism, organized Spiritist conferences, and more, have done so in response to plans set forth many thousands of years ago.

This effort was directed by an organization led by Hilel, in a group managed by Ishmael. Therefore, the spirit realm is not led by spirits who

issue a command and in a flash their desire appears. Instead, there are rules, procedures, and processes – chains of commands – communication paths – all logistics one can think of to carry out orders from high spirits like Christ. High level strategy is developed, and departments interpret the strategy, and devise the required tactics, just like on Earth, except the methods and environment are dictated by the spirit universe, not our physical universe.

### **The Leadership of Christ**

Christ, a High Lord, a perfect spirit, in the hierarchy of the spirit realm. Christ is a spirit who can envelope the spheres under his command. Which includes Earth, and other planets – in their physical and spiritual atmospheres.

He is present in and yet may traverse great reaches of space. Which to Him may appear as simply changing states. Associating Himself with one set of environmental data points for a different set as He so desires.

He commands Universal Fluid to create planets, solar system, temples, and displays for ceremonies. He thinks and therefore He creates. He molds entire races, continents, and the futures of His subjects.

He does this in an atmosphere of love. Do any of us stand still for a moment and thank God to have a leader who epitomizes love, empathy, charity, fraternity, wisdom, and immense strength? Who displays absolute royalty of bearing and grace – and who earned it by experiencing trials and tribulations just like us?

Christ not only came down to Earth, but to other planets as well. He has appeared in body and form in the guise of other free willed races on other orbs. As other Christ-level spirits have done in their domains.

Spirits have told us that we should consider ourselves blessed to have as our guide our Father of us all – Christ. For it is He who brought primitive spirits. Personalities full of selfishness and pride, who took what they fervently desired through cunning or violence. And have molded them into a beginning of spiritual maturity. Humans, that have begun the road, where we at least ponder momentarily, before we grab what is not ours, to enlightenment. Where, as a collective society, we slowly evolve our ideals of justice and equality. This is the effect of the leadership of Christ.

Christ is at this moment preparing our planet of atonement to become a planet of regeneration. Where hate, envy, selfishness, and pride are greatly diminished. Where wars between nations are a thing of the past. Where Earth shall be the paradise that it has always been destined to be.







## **Chapter 4 – God**

Why have I written about the spirit and physical universe and Christ before I discuss God? Because, to begin, even the first small steps, to comprehend God, one must understand what He created. Saying God is the beginning of all and the creator of all, loses all meaning when one does not know what has been fashioned! When we think what has been created, we think of the seas, the mountains, the rivers, the sky, the stars, and our life upon the Earth. This is almost nothing, a small grain of sand on the beach of multiverses, composed of ever-expanding realms of untold number of dimensions.

Hence, I did not start with an explanation of God first, and then flow to the end. Explaining God is beyond my or anyone else's ability. In fact, spirits relay to us, that to begin to understand God, a person should first attempt to comprehend Christ. Only through that portal may one become enlightened. Nevertheless, we are told that spirits in the heavens surrounding the Earth, still do not fully know God.

Therefore, I shall attempt to lay out what information is available.

## The Spirits' Book Definition of God

The first question in *The Spirits' Book* is:

*Question 1. What is God?*

“God is the Supreme Intelligence – First Cause of all things.” <sup>[9]</sup>

Allan Kardec lists six attributes about God:

1. God is *eternal* . If He had had a beginning, He must either have sprung from nothing, or have been created by some being anterior to Himself. It is thus that, step by step, we arrive at the idea of infinity and eternity.
2. God is *unchangeable* . If He were subject to change, the laws which rule the universe would have no stability.
3. God is *immaterial* , that is to say, that His nature differs from everything that we call matter, or otherwise, He would not be unchangeable, for He would be subject to the transformations of matter.
4. God is *unique* . If there were several Gods, there would be neither unity of plan nor unity of power in the ordaining of the universe.
5. God is *all-powerful* because He is unique. If He did not possess sovereign power, there would be something more powerful, or no less powerful, than Himself. He would not have created all things and those which He had not created would be the work of another God.
6. God is *sovereignty just and good* . The providential wisdom of the Divine Laws is revealed as clearly in the smallest things as in the greatest and this wisdom renders it impossible to doubt either His justice or His goodness. <sup>[10]</sup>

The Spiritist concept of God is not unlike others postulated by various religions. Given all the above, we still do not understand God. Only that the concept of what God truly is, is beyond us.

Allan Kardec asks the same question:

*Question 10. Can man comprehend the essential nature of God?*

“No; he lacks the sense required for comprehending it.” [\[11\]](#)

Next, he poses the question that we all ask after trying, but failing to understand the nature of God:

*Question 11. Will man ever become able to comprehend the mystery of the Divinity?*

“When his mind shall no longer be obscured by matter, and when, by his perfection, he shall have brought himself nearer to God, he will see and comprehend Him.” [\[12\]](#)

Hence, the path to God comes back to being a perfect spirit. Our immediate example of a perfect spirit is our Father – Christ.

### **Hints of God**

Hints or signs of God are everywhere. One only needs to look. The very act of searching will lead to discovery.

For example, take the Big Bang theory. It states the physical universe started with nothing, then in an instant all matter appeared and expanded outward. Matter that created every star, planet, animal, plant, and human or other intelligent life in the universe. Who initiated the Big Bang? Who fashioned the Big Bang in such a way to allow life to flourish?

The Old Testament has the answer in Genesis 1:1 “In the beginning, God created the heavens and earth.” Which makes perfect sense, because we have been told by spirits that they communicate with humans according to what they are able to comprehend. Spirits did not attempt to explain the physics of how the spirit universe was the precursor to the physical universe and how God, high spirits, and Universal Fluid was used to create that which modern culture now believes to be everything to relatively primitive tribesmen.

While God created the universe(s), He did not create the life forms that populate our planet in one big bang. Most scientists and religious people concur. By modern standards, the evolution of plants and animals is explained by Darwin’s Theory of Evolution. On the other hand, Spiritism tells us, that adaptation certainly had a roll, nevertheless many mutations were made by teams of spirits who were charged to move along the path of

life. They fashioned small changes to DNA to improve the species they were assigned.

Darwin's theory loses some of its weight when one considers complex structures in nature, such as an eye. What was the beginnings of sight? What were the evolutionary steps to create the multiple structures required to take light in, transmit it to the brain and translate it into actionable data? When one breaks down natural evolution into our basic complex structures – it becomes more difficult to account for how they began – intelligent design starts to make a little more sense. People can argue that nature did it all. But still, here is a hint of God's plan and the workings of the spirit realm.

In the spirit world, the presence of God is constant. The background of pure love permeating the entire atmosphere points to a distant origination of bliss. Like the light of the sun traces back millions of miles to a living star. Spirits report that the effect of love is stronger as one travels to the center toward God.

Near death experiences (NDE) support this supposition. One of the central themes from people who have had good experiences is the alluring sense of complete love and contentment, while they were in the spirit world. So strong was the total immersion they had to be convinced to return to the physical world.

Spirits also tell us that music flows outward from the center of God's universe. A melody which serves to complement and strengthen the love in the air. Added together, reminders of God's presence in the spirit world – the real world - are overwhelming.

While for us, locked into our dense bodies, let those, paraphrasing the words of Christ, who have eyes to see, see. To discover for themselves the fascinating campus we have been assigned to, all possible by the presence and the will of God.

### **God the Matrix**

If we cannot understand God, then how should we consider Him? It is a difficult question, for even if we are not able to grasp a certain concept, we still wish to somehow understand a portion of it.

We do realize that God is all, everything, the beginning, and the end. There is no higher or equal force. Therefore, in my mind, and by the way I discuss this entirely using my own theories, I think of God as The Spirituality. The Spirituality is the system.

An analogy is the operating system of a computer or smart phone. Whether UNIX, Microsoft Windows, or Android, an operating system is the foundation upon which all software runs. An operating system connects code with the hardware and is the final authority for all actions, requests, and communications.

Data may only be stored and accessed with permission. Data may be destroyed or backed up via the instructions of the operating system.

Nothing works without an operating system. No application may run without permission. No display may shine forth, no sound escape, and no data may be entered without it. The entire environment is organized and directed by the operating system.

That said, there is freedom within it. If the rules, laid out processes and procedures are aligned correctly, an application may perform various functions.

It is in this filter that I think of God, the Spirituality. The Spirituality has set forth a divine ecosystem, where pieces of information are captured and sent on and connected to everything else. Just that last sentence denotes a complexity that is beyond our capability.

A system, where nodes of intelligence, called “personalities”, roam. But these “personalities” may only explore the Divine Universal Database according to certain rules; they are only allowed access to where they belong depending upon their spiritual maturity.

We, humans on Earth and as spirits in the spirit realm are these “personalities”. God has fashioned a system whereby independent intelligences may migrate throughout the system, adapting, and changing their own and the state of others. While adhering to a strict set of Divine Laws. Never breaking through certain boundaries.

The Spirituality has set a theme – that of Love – as the divine driver for each independent intelligence. A “personality” may only rise in their set of

permissions (meaning where they may travel and what they are allowed to do) as they acquire more in-depth knowledge of Love and infuse it within their soul.

Then take the entire system and place outside of it (or within it?) an intelligence that closely guides and monitors the “personalities” (spirits) inside it. The Spirituality is both an ecosystem and an intelligence simultaneously.

An analogy is how fantasy books may represent intelligent outposts of life. Usually, a planet or a constructed space station of enormous proportions, control everything, except the life forms that wander in it. This intelligence may interact, assist, or attempt to destroy the migrants. The big difference is that our Spirituality has contained everything within itself. The populace inhabiting it were also created by it.

Hence, our very being, from inconsequential pieces of data to self-directing, autonomous, intelligent, free willed life forms is forever contained in the Spirituality. We have been made, grow, learn, and ultimately may fashion whole civilizations inside an environment which enables us to seemingly create physical objects by the exercise of our thoughts. We are in God and God is within us.

### **God Implanted Within Us**

If we are within God, then what part of God is inside of us? The answer is that we are always intricately connected to the Spirituality. Nothing is hidden or passed by. Hence all is revealed – everything. There are no secrets – physical or mental.

Deep within us lies the most powerful and controlling factor of all – our conscience. A set of Divine Laws which alerts us whenever we commit a wrongful act. Being free willed we have the right to ignore that little alarm bell. Nevertheless, overtime we acquire the wisdom to establish that listening to our conscience is more efficient (for our personal happiness, our advancement, and our self-respect).

Our conscience is not merely a static library. As we travel through life after life, we add to it. We take the black and white and add the greys and other hues to ever evolving situations where a decision is mandated. We

learn to be discerning and to look at the start, the current, and the potential end of any problem.

As we mature, we create a habit to filter and weigh all potential choices through the extensive law library that is our conscience. God planted a seed. We are on a track to care for it and make it grow to be the primary compass of our existence as an immortal spirit.

Hence, God is in us in a distinct and unalterable manner. We are structurally unable to escape the presence of God. No matter how much a person wishes to rebel against the Spirituality, it is impossible, not only to flee, but to cut communication.

We are God's creatures in every way, shape, and form. And we shall stay that way as the sun burns out, as galaxies decay. For we shall eternally be alive in some new state or universe in the service of God.







## **Section 2 – The Residents of the Spirit Universe**

The spirit universe is teeming with life. Spirits have told us there is no empty spot in space. What we see, what our instruments detect as vacuum, is packed with life. We, living in the physical universe, are not yet able to understand the composition of the dynamic eco structure that is the spirit universe.

A universe that appears to be programmable, where the wills of high spirits set the atmosphere and scenery, and the parameters of any active elements. These same elite souls live in and yet modify their environment, like setting the states of a table of data points.

Furthermore, the spirit universe is not just populated with spirits with free will. There are many other levels of semi-intelligent servitors, free standing manifestations, spots of clever life that spontaneously appear and disappear, due to the directions of higher spirits. One may call them elementals, fairies, demons, or genies – they come in all shapes and sizes and serve purposes which, generally, are opaque to us. Nevertheless, they exist.

Hints and remarks abound in Spiritist literature about these other creatures, but I have not read anything definitive. Therefore, I shall only state there is more than free willed spirits, there are spirits with little free will, but mostly instinct (like certain animals), and there are spirits with some intelligence who have a job to do. And there are spirits who are shadows of thoughts, or mere simulacrum who are controlled by distant masters. The spirit universe is complex and diverse.

For the most part, there is a vast graduation of spirits, who carry out orders, with little to no free will, who are on the path to one day become a spirit with free will. Like any person starting out on a low-level job, they primarily take orders. As they gain experience, and their intelligence is more developed they may in turn command others to regulate processes in the material world. Only later will they rise to affect events concerning moral elevation.

Therefore, I shall concentrate upon spirits with free will. For that is what we are, and in general, I believe that spirits of this type control the major levers of the universe.

It is the thinking spirits with unique personalities, molded by countless lives, tragedies, victories, disappointments, and atonements, which via this extensive training, rise to command and direct the spirit universe, under God's direction.

### **The Unfortunates**

Unfortunately, spirits who may one day be destined for greatness, also exist in many states. Spirits are not like thoroughbred horses who start out gallantly at the starting gate on their trek forward. There are many who live in forms which are quite unrecognizable.

There are reports of spirits who are in the shape of an ovaloid, who have lost their perispiritual bodies, due to their decayed mental condition. These poor creatures are locked into strange memory loops, where they replay dramatic events repeatedly. Some have lost all sense of themselves and are slaves to dominant ill-intentioned spirits.

Others have bonded themselves to another spirit, in which they attach their memories and feelings. Essentially, they are parasites, who have no life without their intended host.

Others has reshaped themselves into monsters. Hideous creatures on the outside, which reflects their inside thoughts. By their own direction, or under the command of an assertive low spirit, they become strange impressions of bizarre thoughts.

The unfortunates of which I speak, never range outside of a planet's lower zone or dark abyss. They are locked in their purgatorial nightmare, until they either find a way out or are led by kind angelic rescuers. Such is the difficult road that some souls travel.

### **Immortality and Time**

Laying aside those who are momentarily trapped, most spirits are out and about, learning, and doing They are in the process of rising. They are immortal. We are immortal.

Immortality should be contemplated carefully. For it should alter your entire perspective of life. First, relating living for eternity to us on this physical world (which in fact only seems real to us), imagine thinking of your life over an eighty-year span. The period seems so long at times and

yet it passes by quickly. Hence, you think of yourself, depending on your age and outlook, as striving toward a goal, or looking back at missed opportunities. On the other hand, with an infinite number of years, you never miss an opportunity, because there is time for them to come around again. And you never have to abandon a heartfelt goal because there is always time to achieve it.

With immortality, there is never a reason to give up. You can always work toward whatever destiny you desire. Time does not march on, slowly deleting your options for victory. Instead, victory is forever awaiting you. While time does not march at all.

Time was invented to keep us on the treadmill, running through our appointed classes while we are on Earth. It serves to push us. While in the spirit realm, time does not exist. Things change, people grow, intellectually and spiritually. What denotes progress are changes in states. A spirit moves from one level in heaven to another – that is a change of state. A new temple is created – a change of state for the Universal Fluid which was previously in a different composition.

### **Free Will**

Spirits have free will. What does that mean? It does not imply we have total unbridled freedom to go wherever we want and do whatever we want. It means that we shall not be forced to make a decision against our wishes. Even if our choice is one of folly.

Does this mean that no other creatures have free will? No, animals have instinct and some free will, like a child exercising their own decision making under the guidance of their parents – very limited and the child is mostly focused on what they wish to eat or play with throughout their periods of decisions.

In lesser intelligent life forms, instinct is dominant over free will. There is no sharp dividing line, only graduations of a ranges of thoughts. Hence, as animals rise in intelligence, such as dogs, dolphins, and elephants, they become more able to control their base instincts with their ratiocination processes. Often, their logical thinking trumps their primitive urges.

The main dividing line is that a fully free willed spirit is never compelled into a course of action, whereas a charging elephant could have

his stride cut off by a command from a spirit – a mental jolt aimed directly at the elephant’s ability to move its body. Whereas a rampaging human may receive warnings of the consequences of his or her action; they will not be denied their mistake. Afterall, failure can be an effective teacher.

### **The Encapsulation of Personality**

Personality – that is what we are, a unique personality. A fantastically complex piece of AI (Artificial Intelligence) that is allowed billions of years to attain a Godhead. We on earth think of a rogue AI which during a two-hour movie, attempts to destroy humanity after their first few hours of consciousness. We on the other hand are relatively omnipotent deities after countless lives, trials, incarnations on different planets, mineral, vegetable, animal, spirit servitor, primitive human to semi-civilized human, to a perfected soul in a journey over billions of years. Now that is an advanced AI!

As a distinct personality we can roam throughout the spirit universe according to our spiritual level. For immature souls they are contained within the lower zone of their assigned planet. Mature spirits may travel within their level and lower. While the highest may explore multiple galaxies. The ability to translate across the spirit universe (or to put it in logical construct terms – query various nodes and attributes of different locations) is a tremendous reward for the effort toward spiritual purification.

A personality comes with numerous attributes. Within each there is the capacity to store all events, to interpret the data around you in a sensory manner – meaning data made to appear tangible. For instance, a house created by another spirit via thought, shall appear as the spirit designed it – not as a collection of data, parameters, or Universal Fluid.

In essence, we are who we are. Our character remains the same whether in physical or spirit form. We may be lighter, smarter, and better looking as a spirit, but we are the same person. The same loving and bubbly friend to all, or the moody sarcastic person who longs to be alone. Physical death does not transform us into angelic beings.

Hence to be a spirit means to be an immortal encapsulation of a thinking and feeling persona. As we believe ourselves to be composed of complex

emotions and thoughts in the physical world, we are the same as a spirit.

This is the lesson we should take to heart. We are not robotic creatures created in an assembly line. Each with the same features and characteristics. We are immensely complex logical constructions, at home in a physical body or as a spirit, who contains unique aspects – which makes us alive and distinct. Being distinct and free willed is exactly what the Spirituality aspires us to be.





## Chapter 5 – Spirits

As mentioned in the previous chapter, spirits start out as a simple logical structure. There is no free will, no self-realization, and no sense of being.

A spirit may spend time in the physical world as bacteria, or as a more complex multicell organism. Gradually we may work up the ladder to be an insect, then a slightly more complex animal. This is necessary.

### **Spirit**

First, we must establish what we are on Earth and how that relates to a spirit. A human on this planet is composed of three parts. First, a spirit, that logical encapsulation of our personality. Our spirit is immortal, contains all our attributes and connections to enable us to live and swim in the immense cloud of data that is the spirit world.

We are told by other spirits, that a spirit, without utilizing their perispiritual body appears as a ball of light. Many times, people who have had near death experiences describe a light coming toward them, then when it is close it appears as an angel. Still shining light, but fuzzy outlines of a human form may be discerned. This is most probably because the spirit, traveling by the speed of thought to the location of the person, does not think of their perispiritual form, then when they arrive, they re-clothe themselves.

Spirits do not use their brawn to create. They use their minds. In the spirit world, thought is action. Thoughts create the environment, buildings, temples, mountains, and oceans. The higher the spirit the more power they possess to manufacture by thought. Jesus was part of a group of spirits who fashioned our solar system.

Spirits come in various levels. Spirits who reside in the Dark Abyss (a type of purgatory) are less dense than we in the physical realm, but still are invisible to us. As a spirit ascends spiritually, they become a higher ratio of energy to matter. Thus, a spirit on a low level may not even detect a higher spirit, until the superior spirit makes herself or himself more dense (adds to their apparent matter to be at the same approximate ratio of energy to matter), so the inferior spirit may notice them.

The higher the spirit the brighter they appear. Their luminosity is not a function of their inner composition. Instead, they reflect the love that is present throughout the universe. This is due to their level of purity of love, wisdom, knowledge, charity, selflessness, and fraternity. Hence a lower spirit may appear as dull or dark.

Humans on earth too shine or not according to their spiritual level. Spirits describe seeing masses of dark clouds as they descend into cities, as masses of people, who are concentrating on their problems go about on their daily quest of living on a planet of atonement.

Spirits do need energy. Whereas humans on Earth need to eat many calories to drag their heavy bodies under great gravitational forces, a spirit requires considerably less. Spirits need only to absorb sunlight or drink the energized water in the spirit world to feel refreshed and vitalized. Although, spirits in the lower levels of heaven and below, still retain their habit of eating. They do not require it.

Spirits do not require sleep. Sleep is necessary for us on our globe to recharge our batteries to enable us to stay active the other hours of the day. Also, during sleep, the spirit that is connected to the body, may roam the spirit world. Interacting with other spirits; working, talking, making mischief, seeking pleasures – all depending upon the spiritual level of the person.

Dreams sometimes are the faint (or vivid) remembrances of our time in the spirit world. The spirit who had experiences in a totally alien environment, where there is no time, images vastly different than Earth – often wakes with a fuzzy recollection. This is because our human brain does not have the ability to interpret the strange scenery and features of the dynamic spirit realm. Our brain does what it can with the information it can process.

To understand the difficulty of seeing an object of which one has no concept of, there are reports that when the native Indians of the New World first saw Spanish ships, they thought they were seeing low moving clouds on the horizon. Giant (to them) ships with yards of sails was not a concept they could grasp.



Spirits also have different methods of communication. Spirits do speak to one another. This is the preferred mode for less mature spirits and residents in the lower levels of heaven. They speak in the language they used when they passed over. Hence, a spirit from Latin America talking to a spirit from Asia may not understand each other. If their perispirits had retained a language in common from previous lives, then if they had the sophistication to do so, they could communicate in that language.

As spirits progress, they communicate by thought. They send words to each other's intellectual center. A learned spirit may send out thoughts in mental waves, the receiver will pick up these mental waves if they are vibrating on the same track (in a type of mental harmony) with the speaker and process those signals into a language they comprehend. The perispirit, will automatically interpret the vibrations.

Spirits at any level can read the other's thoughts. Since just like us on Earth, thoughts flow out in every direction, they can be intercepted and understood.

More advanced spirits use a third type of communication. They may send an image to a certain spirit directly. Spirits have told us that they combine images and words to ensure the accuracy of the communication. When spirits send an image, it appears like a short flash of light coming out of their mouths.

This phenomenon was observed by the Apostle John in Revelation 19:15, "coming out of his mouth a sharp sword", as he saw orders given, he could not help but notice the flash of light, appearing as a bright shiny sword to John. His is the first account of spirit communication by images that I have found.

There is another method to detect the status of others that a high spirit may be interested in. As an example, our guardian angel is our constant companion. But that does not mean that he or she is physically close. While they may maintain a type of direct communication link between them and their appointed human, they may desire to investigate the near future to determine if they may need to appear next to their ward or ask for other angels to help in a dire situation. The guardian angel will access the Universal Cloud, or Universal Database (however one may wish to think of it) to determine if any future events will occur which require close

assistance. Therefore, they would be well appraised beforehand for any significant event which may occur in the life of the soul they are guiding.

Hearing is also on a different level altogether. A man reported in his out of body experience, that he was sitting in a chair at a table in a vast spiritual library. The chair was at a slight angle to the column opposite. When he moved the chair, the feet of the chair made a squeaking sound. His head, also at an angle, could detect the sound bouncing off the column and returning to him at different times. His hearing was so acute, that he knew the difference in time in microseconds, when the sound reverberated back to him from the ear closest to the column and the other ear a tiny fraction farther from the column.

Lastly, a spirit can see colors which are invisible to us. Many spirits have difficulty describing the hues and tones of objects that are unrelatable to us on this planet. And their field of vision may extend far afield, depending upon their level of progress.

Therefore, in reality, you are a creature who can fly to the ends of the universe by the speed of thought, manufacture objects by thought, listen and see at the level of a super-human, communicate over distances of billions or trillions of miles, speak to multitudes with words and images, is composed of energy and a bit of matter, never needs sleep, never is sick, and never grows old. To fully accomplish this state in all its freedom, you must study and work to make yourself a better and more knowledgeable person. You have the free will to decide if the effort is worth it or not.

### **The Perispirit**

Second, is the perispirit, which is our idealized form. It is the body that we imagine ourselves to inhabit. It serves as the connection from the spirit to the physical body. In its function, it retains our ability to understand every language we had ever spoken in past lives. The perispirit, when attached to a physical body, completely covers and is invasive to every cell and organ.

The perispirit organizes the body into distinct force centers, which correspond to Chakras, as described by the Hindu system. Spiritist literature defines the force centers as:

1. Crown Center – Command all other centers. The stimuli of the spirit. Assimilates and distributes solar energies and electromagnetic resources.
2. Cerebral Center – Controls senses, sight, hearing, touch, psychic abilities.
3. Throat Center – Controls speech.
4. Heart Center – Controls emotions.
5. Splenic Center – Controls the distribution of nourishment for your body.
6. Gastric Center – The entry point of food and fluids.
7. Genesic Center – Controls sex and allows stimulus to your body.

Therefore, the perispirit is composed of seven major centers, all working in concert to regulate our spiritual and physical bodies. One could imagine the perispirit lying as a transparent layer atop and inside our bodies, connected to our material organs and individual cells to guide, heal, and regulate our physical life. The connection is a two-way street, as we live and learn in our bodies, the perispirit absorbs feedback, allowing it to transfer the knowledge gained in our present life to be used in the spirit world and our subsequent lives.

The seven force centers correspond to the seven major Chakras in the Hindu and Buddhist tradition. Chakras are energy points in the “subtle body”. The “subtle body” is not part of the physical body but is part of a different plane of existence. <sup>[13]</sup> Therefore, the “Subtle body” corresponds to the perispirit.

Hence the eastern religions knew of the vehicle that contains our spirit while we are here in the physical world. They understood that we are but travelers here on earth, taking our turn living as dense matter, so we may partake of physical life that has been assigned to us.

### **Physical Body**

Lastly, comes the physical body. We have two parents; we inherit genes from both parents. Hence, we form in the womb according to how the random combinations of two sets of DNA meld together. This is what we

understand today about our physical creation. There is truth to this scenario, but it is not the entire truth.

First let us start with conception. When sperm begins to swim toward the egg, a single sperm may be selected by the spirit world as the candidate to fertilize the egg. This, of course, depends upon the level of planning for a person's reincarnation. Nevertheless, in some cases great care is taken to ensure the correct set of genes are paired.

Upon conception, the spirit designated to be the child enters the newly fertilized egg. Therefore, life does start at conception.

When the DNA combines, in some cases, spirits will modify certain strands to create physical features or attributes for the child. For example, a physician, who is destined to become a surgeon, may have their DNA slightly altered to give them a steadiness of hand and an exceptional clear vision. And special attention would be given to their nervous system as a whole to start them on the path to be highly successful in their career.

Spirits have related to us, that if a person has a plan for their life which will serve to influence society, or they have earned merit from previous lives, then they would likely undergo changes to their chromosomes to prepare them for their journey on the planet.

As an added level of regulation, the perispirit also serves to direct the gestation of the baby and during the childhood growth years. Therefore, while built upon the foundation of our parents, our body may be modified to the fullest extent possible by the will of other spirits and our own perispirit.

The perispirit which directs the form of the cells is strongly rooted in the blood. The mother lends her blood to the baby. What has been revealed to us is that the mother's blood continues to affect the child until they are about seven years old. Only then, will the child's system fully assume the blood formation process. Hence, a mother's influence, invasive influence, extends for quite a few years even after birth.

Our perispirit is the model we use for physical life and our appearance in spirit life. It is the façade which covers our spirit. It makes us look like a familiar being, instead of a flash of light. It encases the built-up logic and events we have experienced, that comprise our personality. And it reflects

the pains and sufferings, as well as the joys and loves of our totality in the spirit and physical worlds we have lived – it provides an outside interpretation to our inside character.

### **Spirit to Physical**

The components of the spirit world (spirit and perispirit) are tightly interwoven in our physical bodies. It is as if the perispirit was the model (given the limitations of the genes of the parents – with possible modifications) and the cells grew in our body to fill in the outline.

This complex relationship of perispiritual command and control of the physical body is not a process that appears magically. It is the training of the perispirit that begins when we (as our budding logical personality) started out as a primitive piece of life.

Imagine a simple piece of code that can learn. It was assigned a single cell. It acquired the expertise to connect to the cell, control its functions, read the status of the cell, and determine when to terminate the cell.

After numerous trials, it exhibited mastery of that simple process. Next, it moved on to control a slightly more complex arrangement, a multi-celled living organism. It then, over centuries, divided the creature it mastered, into force centers. A separate logical routine within it directed each force center. A master routine orchestrated the interactions between them.

This learning process, proceeded over vast amounts of ever increasingly sophisticated life forms, resulting in the competent mastering of controlling a complex animal.

Each time an organism was controlled, it added to its knowledge, the lessons it acquired when it was born, struggled to stay alive in a competitive environment, and died – in various gruesome manners. Each death closed one more episode in which it stored more information on how it could be successful. It built instincts for survival. It knew the ferocity demanded to live in a savage world.

As it continued to accumulate new experiences, it also grew in complexity. It developed a kernel that was unique to itself, a self-image, a personality, an outlook on life shaped by countless experiments. As it was guided into more and more intricate creatures, it began to travel beyond

mere instinct, it started to think for itself – just a little. For it found that thinking about a problem or situation, maximized its chances for survival.

Until one day, it was given a gift by its spiritual masters. It was allowed free will. The freedom to make choices. The freedom to be good or bad, mean or nice, benevolent or petty, angry or calm. Unbeknownst to it, it became a spirit with unlimited potential.

### **The Hierarchy of Spirits**

Therefore, as mentioned in Chapter One, these newly designated free willed spirits must be sent somewhere to begin their next level of training. They start out as brutish creatures and gradually begin to learn socialization on a primitive planet.

Once they have exhibited the qualities necessary to be part of a larger tribe they are sent to a planet of atonement. Allan Kardec, in his codification of Spiritism, lays out the different classifications of spirits as given to him by communications from spirits to various mediums.

One may detect in the steps from one order to the next, the gradual transformation from the efficient use of primitive emotions, required for survival, to the increased reliance on the noble intentions of love, charity, fraternity, and honesty. All required to become a productive member of a truly civilized society.

Here is the broad summary of the orders of spirits as written by Allan Kardec in *The Spirits Book* :

"We may place in the first or highest rank those who have reached the degree of relative perfection which constitutes what may be called 'pure spirits.' We may place in the second rank those who have reached the middle of the ascensional ladder, those who have achieved the degree of purification in which aspiration after perfection has become the ruling desire. We may place in the third or lowest rank all those imperfect spirits who are still on the lower rungs of the ladder. They are characterized by ignorance, the love of evil, and all the low passions that retard their progress upwards." <sup>[14]</sup>

There are no set classes or levels, each individual must be judged against others to determine the relative level of a spirit. *The Spirits Book*

tells us the number of levels is unlimited, but for purposes of attempting to make the spirit realm comprehensible, we are given broad categories.

### **Third Order Spirits**

Third Order spirits are the least advanced spirits around the sphere of earth. They exist close to the surface, a little above (the Lower Zone) and below the crust (the Dark Abyss). Many walk around us in everyday life, observing and participating. Third Order spirits are those of us who have left their previous life in either one or more in these conditions (I have created broad categories):

1. Lack of Spirituality – There are many good people who do not believe in an afterlife. Hence, when they awaken and find themselves still on earth they are confused. These spirits are helped by second order spirits to realize where they are. The vast majority ascend fairly rapidly.
2. Rebellious – Some spirits do not want to recognize the existence of a Supreme Being. Hence, they remain where their bodies decompose, on earth, until they determine the beauty of life is in serving. Strong-willed and usually intelligent, when they are ready, they have the capacity to rise quickly in the spirit hierarchy.
3. Materialist - Lived life dedicated to the amassing of wealth. Most or everything else took a lower priority. Being miserly is an example. Spirits who worship their property above all else, find they are still tied to earth and cannot leave it.
4. Selfish – Never thought of others, their needs always came first. Like the materialist, life was about what could be done on earth.
5. Criminal – A combination of materialism and selfishness, with a violent streak and a complete lack of respect for others. They will be in the right place when they pass on. Eventually, they will tire of existing in a world full of souls like them and seek to improve.
6. Suicides – They left life on earth before their appointed time. Unfortunately for them, they will have to reside around the earth until they were fated to expire. The Spirituality frowns on people

who cut classes. This includes “unconscious suicides”; a spirit term for those who killed themselves by dangerous behavior, such as drinking and drug addiction. Being locked in the Lower Zone is not always the case, there are exceptions, such as when a person is driven to suicide by spirits or ill-intentioned humans.

There is a complete description of the third order of spirits in Allan Kardec’s, *The Spirits Book* , starting at question 101. Third order spirits, while in the spirit realm, are composed of more matter than spirit energy. They are denser than higher spirits. Lower spirits are unable to detect the presence of higher spirits unless the higher spirits consciously make themselves as dense as lower spirits.

*"101. General Characteristics.* --Predominant influence of matter over spirit. Propensity to evil. Ignorance, pride, selfishness, and all the evil passions which result from these.

They have the intuition of the existence of God, but they have no comprehension of Him.

They are not all of them thoroughly bad; in many of them there is more of frivolity, want of reasoning power, and love of mischief, than of downright wickedness. Some of them do neither good nor evil; but the very fact that they do no good denotes their inferiority. Others, on the contrary, take pleasure in evil, and are gratified when they find an opportunity of doing wrong.

Among spirits of this order, a certain amount of intelligence is often allied with malice and the love of mischief; but, whatever may be their intellectual development, their ideas are wanting in elevation, and their sentiments are more or less abject.

Their knowledge of the things of the spirit-world is narrow, and the little they know about them is confused with the ideas and prejudices of the corporeal life. They can give only false and incomplete notions of the spirit-world; but the attentive observer may always find in their communications, however imperfect, the confirmation of the great truths proclaimed by spirits of the higher orders.

Their character is revealed by their language. Every spirit who, in his communications, betrays an evil intention, may be ranged in the third



order; consequently, every evil thought suggested to our mind comes to us from a spirit of that order.

They see the happiness enjoyed by good spirits, and this sight causes them perpetual torment; for they experience all the agonies produced by envy and jealousy.

They preserve the remembrance and the perception of the sufferings of corporeal life; and this impression is often more painful than the reality. They suffer, in fact, both from the ills they have themselves endured, and from those which they have caused to be endured by others. And as these sufferings endure for a very long time, they believe themselves to be destined to suffer forever. God, for their punishment, wills that they should believe this.” [\[15\]](#)

Third order spirits are the unseen souls that we come into contact the most. Our brains pick up, subconsciously, their thoughts. We are on earth to learn to filter out the suggestions made to us by these types of spirits. This is why we have a conscience, so we may use the full set of Divine Laws that God implants inside each one of us, to determine what is right and wrong.

When a person pays a medium for advice or a group of untrained people hold a séance, these are the types of spirits which are attracted. The level of the medium or group calling for spirits determines the level of the spirits who come. Hence, morally and spiritually advanced mediums will attract higher order spirits. While at the other end of the spectrum, the local fortune teller or the Ouija Board users will communicate with lower spirits. The information you receive from third order spirits should not be fully trusted.

Allan Kardec breaks down the third order spirits into more categories:

“*103. Ninth Class--Frivolous Spirits.* --They are ignorant, mischievous, unreasonable, and addicted to mockery. They meddle with everything, and reply to every question without paying any attention to truth. They delight in causing petty annoyances, in raising false hopes of petty joys, in misleading people by mystifications and trickery. The spirits vulgarly called hobgoblins, will-o'-the-wisps, gnomes, etc., belong to this class. They are under the orders of spirits of a higher category, who make use of them as we do of servants.

In their communications with men their language is often witty and facetious, but shallow. They are quick to seize the oddities and absurdities of men and things, on which they comment with sarcastic sharpness. If they borrow distinguished names, as they are fond of doing, it is rather for the fun of the thing than from any intention to deceive by so doing.

*104. Eighth Class--Spirits who Pretend to more Science than they Possess.* --Their knowledge is often considerable, but they imagine themselves to know a good deal more than they know in reality. Having made a certain amount of progress from various points of view, their language has an air of gravity that may easily give a false impression as to their capacities and enlightenment; but their ideas are generally nothing more than the reflection of the prejudices and false reasoning of their terrestrial life. Their statements contain a mixture of truths and absurdities, in the midst of which traces of presumption, pride, jealousy, and obstinacy, from which they have not yet freed themselves, are abundantly perceptible.

*105. Seventh Class--Neutral Spirits.* --They are not sufficiently advanced to take an active part in doing good, nor are they bad enough to be active in doing wrong. They incline sometimes to the one, sometimes to the other; and do not rise above the ordinary level of humanity, either in point of morality or of intelligence. They are strongly attached to the things of this world, whose gross satisfactions they regret.

*106. Sixth Class--Noisy and Boisterous Spirits.* --Spirits of this kind do not, strictly speaking, form a distinct class in virtue of their personal qualities; they may belong to all the classes of the third order. They often manifest their presence by the production of phenomena perceptible by the senses, such as raps, the movement and abnormal displacing of solid bodies, the agitation of the air, etc. They appear to be, more than any other class of spirits, attached to matter; they seem to be the principal agents in determining the vicissitudes of the elements of the globe, and to act upon the air, water, fire, and the various bodies in the entrails of the earth. Whenever these phenomena present a character of intention and intelligence, it is impossible to attribute them to a mere fortuitous and physical cause. All spirits are able to produce

physical phenomena; but spirits of elevated degree usually leave them to those of a lower order, more apt for action upon matter than for the things of intelligence, and, when they judge it to be useful to produce physical manifestations, employ spirits of subalter n degree as their auxiliaries.” [\[16\]](#)

All of us need to be aware of the world around us and who is trying to influence us so we can learn how to guard against ruinous advice and onslaughts against holding our emotions in check.

### **Second Order Spirits**

There is a complete description of the second order of spirits in Allan Kardec’s, *The Spirits Book* , starting at question 107. Second order spirits, while in the spirit realm, are composed of more spirit energy than matter. They are less dense than the lower spirits. Lower spirits, just like us, cannot see or feel their presence.

A general summary is covered in Question 107, of *The Spirits Book* :

“107. General Characteristics.--Predominance of spirit over matter; desire of excellence. Their qualities and their power for good are proportionate to the degree at which they have arrived. Some of them possess scientific knowledge, others have acquired wisdom and charity; the more advanced among them combine knowledge with moral excellence. Not being yet completely dematerialized, they preserve the traces of their corporeal existence, more or less strongly marked, according to their rank--traces which are seen either in their mode of expressing themselves, in their habits, or even, in some cases, in the characteristic eccentricities and hobbies still retained by them. But for these weaknesses and imperfections they would be able to pass into the category of spirits of the first order.

They have acquired the comprehension of the idea of God and of infinity, and already share the felicity of the higher spheres. They find their happiness both in the accomplishment of good and in the prevention of evil. The affection by which they are united affords them ineffable delight, troubled neither by envy, remorse nor any other of the evil passions which make the torment of spirits of lower degree; but

they have still to undergo the discipline of trial until they have completed the work of their purification.

As spirits, they infuse good and noble thoughts into the minds of men, turn them from the path of evil, protect those whose course of life renders them worthy of their aid, and neutralize by their suggestions, the influence of lower spirits on the minds of those who do not willingly yield to the evil counsels of the latter.

The human beings in whom they are incarnated are upright and benevolent; they are actuated neither by pride, selfishness, nor ambition; they feel neither hatred, rancor, envy, nor jealousy, and do good for its own sake.” <sup>[17]</sup>

Good spirits, while in the spirit realm, reside on one of the levels of heaven.

We, on earth, would live in very different world without the guidance given to us by second order spirits, under the direction of first order spirits. They are our guardian angels; they are there to whisper warnings in our ear when we start on the wrong path. Not only do they help us, but they assist lower order spirits as well. All spirits who have not found their way to ascend to heaven, who are stuck close to the surface, are watched over and helped by these valiant second order souls.

*The Spirits Book* divides this order into sub-classes:

“In periods of ignorance and superstition, men have regarded them as beneficent divinities. They may be divided into four principal groups:-

*108. Fifth Class--Benevolent Spirits.* --Their dominant quality is kindness. They take pleasure in rendering service to men and in protecting them, but their knowledge is somewhat narrow. They have progressed in morality rather than in intelligence.

*109. Fourth Class--Learned Spirits.* --They are specially distinguished by the extent of their knowledge. They are less interested in moral questions than in scientific investigation, for which they have a greater aptitude; but their scientific studies are always prosecuted with a view to practical utility, and they are entirely free from the base passions common to spirits of the lower degrees of advancement.

*110. Third Class--Wise Spirits.* --The most elevated moral qualities form their distinctive characteristics. Without having arrived at the possession of unlimited knowledge, they have reached a development of intellectual capacity that enables them to judge correctly of men and of things.

*111. Second Class--High Spirits.* --They unite, in a very high degree, scientific knowledge, wisdom, and goodness. Their language, inspired only by the purest benevolence, is always noble and elevated, often sublime. Their superiority renders them more apt than any others to impart to us just and true ideas in relation to the incorporeal world, within the limits of the knowledge permitted to mankind. They willingly enter into communication with those who seek for truth in simplicity and sincerity, and who are sufficiently freed from the bonds of materiality to be capable of understanding it; but they turn from those whose inquiries are prompted only by curiosity, or who are drawn away from the path of rectitude by the attractions of materiality.” <sup>[18]</sup>

When we communicate with second order spirits, either via a Near Death Experience (NDE), visions, voices, a medium, or alternate methods, we detect them by their concern for our spiritual well-being. Spirits in the second order, realize that life on earth is not meant to accumulate wealth, but to accumulate spirituality. Hence, when we perform a wrongful act, they will be the ones whispering in our ear, telling us to follow our conscience, whereas lower spirits (third order) will be supplying reasons to ignore our violation of Divine Laws.

In summary, we depend on second order spirits to direct our plan of life on earth, more than we realize. They ensure our progress from one trial to the next and send us needed semaphores to alert us when our direction is off course.

### **First Order of Spirits**

To be a first order spirit is our goal. This is why we are on this planet and why we have requested the trials that we are travelling through at this moment.

Keep in mind that even within an order, each spirit has their particular talents and attributes. To us, far down in the “unlimited” number of levels,

all first level spirits must look-alike. We do not have the capability to gauge variations in their perfection. Here is what we are told about the highest class of spirits:

“113. *First and only Class.* --They have passed up through every degree of the scale of progress, and have freed themselves from all the impurities of materiality. Having attained the sum of perfection of which created beings are susceptible, they have no longer to undergo either trials or expiations. Being no longer subject to reincarnation in perishable bodies, they enter on the life of eternity in the immediate presence of God. They are in the enjoyment of a beatitude which is unalterable, because they are no longer subject to the wants or vicissitudes of material life; but this beatitude is not *the monotonous idleness of perpetual contemplation*. They are the messengers and ministers of God, the executors of His orders in the maintenance of universal harmony. They exercise a sovereign command over all spirits inferior to themselves, aid them in accomplishing the work of their purification, and assign to each of them a mission proportioned to the progress already made by them. To assist men in their distresses, to excite them to the love of good or to the expiation of the faults which keep them back on the road to the supreme felicity, are for them congenial occupations. They are sometimes spoken of as angels, archangels, or seraphim.” <sup>[19]</sup>

To reach this exalted stage takes an unknown number of lives and time. Spirits or angels, as they may be called, have removed the blemishes within their being. Imperfections such as hate, jealousy, anger, any type of pettiness, and an assortment of lesser emotions are replaced with universal love, kindness, and fraternity for all beings.

They love the person of noble character and outlaw equally. This does not mean that high spirits approach each person identically; the good may only need a path opened to make minor improvements, while the outlaw may require tough lessons to prod them onto the right road.

The primary example of a pure spirit is Jesus, who brought a message of love and forgiveness to us more than two thousand years ago. Jesus also sent other high spirits to earth to teach us; some of the messengers of peace

were Socrates, Buddha, Confucius, and Lao Tzu. All came to live in difficult circumstances to shine a light on what should be important to us.

What *The Spirits Book* , doesn't reveal is the immense training they had and ability a high spirit has in the spirit realm. They are far more than a being composed of perfect love. They combine knowledge, wisdom, and compassion. First order spirits are mainly composed of spirit energy and a small or non-existent portion of matter.

When mediums talk to spirits, communication with a high order spirit is rare, mainly because the medium must also be a spiritually advanced person to be able to open a channel. These types of spirits will not speak about mundane matters but will give spiritual advice and guidance to those seeking help with a pure heart.

In essence, we are members of spirit society. We are junior members at best. Similar to any newcomer, our best approach to rise, is to listen and learn. Listen to the advice of our betters and work hard to learn how to be like them.







## Chapter 6 – The Journey of a Spirit

We have discussed the broad outlines of a spirit and their place in the spirit universe. Now we shall embark on a more detailed description of how an individual spirit climbs the ladder toward improvement and eventual perfection.

On Earth there is a generally accepted plan for the education of children, from kindergarten to college. The process has been in place for centuries. It is tried and true. Children are gradually led from one step of learning to the next. The system tries not to overtax the child beyond its inherent mental and physical states. No one wishes children to be thrown into difficult educational environments in which they become discouraged and fail. On the contrary, a good and ever rising level of competency is desired, to instill in the youth, a sense of the worth of intellectual and physical success.

The same philosophy is used in the spirit world. When a spirit is first selected to be classified as a free willed spirit – by a process and criteria that is still a mystery – it must be socialized. As a child enters nursery school or kindergarten; selfish, scared, not used to working with others, and generally unacquainted with the school routine – so does a spirit enter their new phase.

Hence, a primitive planet is selected. Earth was once a primitive planet. The gradual transition from an animal, with primarily an instinct to survive and to kill if necessary, to a human with an advanced sense of self begins on a planet with little discernable civilization.

The primary purpose of this first stage is to instill the recognition of a level of existing with other beings, loving immediate family members, and a small first notice of their conscience. Which is implanted in every free willed creature and is composed of the set of Divine Laws.

The conscience, at this stage of development, is seldom utilized or consulted. Nevertheless, it is there. Over time it will not be possible to ignore. But that is far in the future for these early primitive humans.

The spirit world for these immature humans is not much different than their physical world. Although, I have not read anything from spirits to

expand on the role of heaven on a primitive planet.

I have read, that for the tribes in Brazil, living in the Rio de Janeiro area, they had an encampment above Rio, when they passed over. The environment was a pristine state of nature, not unlike Rio before it was settled by Europeans. Only after Rio was populated, did the celestial city *Nosso Lar* appear. It was planned by the newly arrived colonists, and eventually grew into a large astral city.

Hence, I surmise, souls on a primitive planet went eons, living in the spirit world alternating with the physical world, with small differences in scenery between the two. Reprogramming their base instincts to grow beyond mere survival is a long and arduous process.

Eventually, a spirit is ready for the next level.

### **Growth on a Planet of Atonement**

Spirits commence their ascension within a planet of atonement on the lowest rung. They may have been sent to our planet by the order of higher spirits. At their primitive level, they would have no input as to their prospective life.

There are exceptions to this rule. Spirits who have repeatedly failed in a planet of atonement (at a slightly more advance level) or a planet of regeneration may be sent to our globe. Once incarnated, their instinct of life on a superior planet causes them to strive to improve their life here also. Sometimes they are of general help to society in moving best practices forward. Other times they merely demonstrate a superior level of taking advantage of others for their own gain.

Once a spirit enters the higher-level planet, this does not signify that they are on the same spiritual level. Within a planet of atonement, as with any stage of planetary spirituality, there is a wide range. Hence, a spirit coming from a primitive planet may be reborn into one of the backward areas, such as a tribe in the Amazon. They could also be introduced into a poor hard-working family in any populated region so they could learn the first steps to succeed in a civilized environment.

A newly arrived spirit may spend centuries, in birth after birth, in humble circumstances, learning their first lessons. A high spirit

communicated to Allan Kardec about one such newly arrived soul. A primitive spirit completed their last life with moderate success. He requested to be rich in their next incarnation. His spirit mentors attempted to reason with him, that he was not yet ready for such a difficult trial. He would not listen; therefore, they created a blueprint for his next life – his wish would be fulfilled. He accumulated houses in which he rented rooms. He was so enamored with money, he slept in a tiny room under the stairs in one of his houses. He lived as a miser. When he died, he continued to live in his house. Jealous of anyone who came into what he considered to be his possession. The poor man was locked into a materialistic prison. The spirit said, they gave him his wish as a lesson. Eventually, he would be freed of his earthly bands.

The results could be worse. An immature spirit may commit heinous crimes. That person may only think of other people as objects to be used for their own gain. When they die, they will not ascend to heaven, they will descend into the Dark Abyss.

### **The Law of Affinity**

First, before we describe the areas where spirits will be sent to after they pass over to the other side, the process for deciding where they will be sent must be explained.

Unlike life on our present planet, where people are mixed randomly, albeit income stratification does occur, but this does not correlate to spiritual or moral elevation, there are exclusive areas assigned according to one's spiritual ascendance.

Hence, in the spirit world, where high spirits exhort us to demonstrate love, charity, fraternity, and honesty – there is rampant discrimination. It is based entirely upon the law of affinity. The law gathers likeminded people together. Not perfectly attuned, but of the same general level of kindness and wisdom, predilection for goodness, and willingness to learn about the reality of the spirit universe. As one goes higher the qualifications become more stringent.

Jesus explicitly described the law of affinity when He gave us the parable of the wheat and the tares. Jesus told of a farmer who planted wheat, but during the night ill-intentioned people came in and planted

weeds. The farmer told his workers to not worry about pulling the weeds, since at an early stage of growth they are indistinguishable from the wheat. Instead, they were to wait until the harvest, whereupon the weeds would be gathered and thrown into the fire. The useful would be utilized and the plants merely taking in water would provide fertilizer for the soil - proving there is a place for everything. Not unlike the law of affinity, where enlighten spirits would rise and unenlightened spirits would descend. The only difference is the weed, will have a chance to become wheat one day.

When a person dies, they are delivered to the level they belong. They are to reside with others with the same general characteristics, beliefs, and personalities. While it may appear to be discrimination to our eyes, it is an important process to ensure spiritual ascension. Without it a spirit would experience an exceedingly difficult path to improvement. Like schools where disruptive students are allowed to affect other students who are trying to be dedicated, whereby the hard-working student's performance falls off considerably due to the tense environment.

Residing in a safe learning environment cannot be overrated. First, stress is reduced easing the learning process. Second, when others around you are concentrated upon excellence, you too become infused with their elan. Thirdly, watching others successfully complete their instructions, missions, and other tasks, motivates you to do the same. Resulting in a positive feedback loop of increasing performance.

Hence, the spirit realm, created and organized by God, does nothing without a purpose. Placing people into various categories may seem non-egalitarian at first, but it is the surest method for all concerned to one day become a pure spirit. It must be remembered that in whatever area a spirit is sent to, it is always temporary and one step toward upward movement.

### **The Function of Purgatory**

Spiritism does not use the term hell or purgatory, they label the land of darkness and suffering the Lower Zone and the land under the crust of the Earth the Dark Abyss. Although the descriptions of life in these areas do not precisely correspond to the legends of hell and purgatory. They are a land of waste and suffering.

Whenever we feel superior to others, we should stop and think about our time in these savage spaces of remorse and regret. We have all been there. Not just for a short time between two incarnations, but for many periods.

As immature spirits, selfish and prideful, we would naturally descend to the lower zone or the dark abyss. We would be with others like us. We would come to our senses after death and find our way to a city where we would feel comfortable, amongst the other retrogressed souls. We may even rediscover our close friends.

In fact, for the more brutal spirits, they may feel right at home. I was at a medium's meeting that served to help errant spirits. A spirit appeared talking through a medium. He seemed focused on telling the group how pathetic we were. He talked for a while, then the consoling medium asked him if he did not miss the love and friendship that could be waiting for him in heaven. He replied, that in his present inferior state that they did try to create their own type of love. He did not sound too convincing. In fact, it was the only time he spoke normally, as opposed to yelling out his insults to the group.

Hence, like humans everywhere, people seem to come to an accommodation to their circumstances. It may not be pleasant, but they live through it. This is easier done for immature spirits who have never known a better life. Existing with others who degrade you and constantly attempt to take advantage of you is just part of everyday life.

Eventually, as a spirit travels through more lives and trials and tribulations, they begin to expect more. They desire love and affirmation. They slowly adapt to a better and more wholesome lifestyle. Although, this may not stop them from still treating others badly.

When, they pass away and return to the lower zone or the dark abyss, they wish to rediscover the atmosphere they lost. They become agitated to have to strive to create just a small place of serenity in the turmoil in which they live. They begin to think of better things. They begin to analyze their actions and attempt to find a way out. Finally, they realize they must ask for help.

This spark is what the mentors in the spirit realm have been waiting for. A small opening in the dense shield of hate and rebelliousness. But the journey upwards is not easy or pain-free.

A good angel may appear alongside them and inquire if they would rather ascend into the light than to stay in the darkness. If they follow the benevolent spirit, as they rise, they shall feel pain – emotional turmoil. For as they ascend, they encounter a different atmosphere, where the weight of evil must be discarded to move ahead. Shedding or more aptly burning off the primitive tendencies is not pleasant.

Memories of past deeds and times of cruelty replay in their minds. Causing extreme anguish. They must prove themselves capable of walking through fire to achieve a status where one day they may help plan out their atonement for their wrongful actions.

The suffering pilgrim must plod ahead, with maximum desire and resolution to escape the dire circumstances in which they had found themselves in after death.

The very act of focused determination sets up the foundation for them to be humble and ready to learn when they reach that first outpost of serenity. By the time they arrive, rebelliousness, pride, jealousy, and their stubbornness is reduced to manageable levels. Making them students who are open to build a new life.

### **Education of Spirits**

Once a spirit emerges out of the lands of dimness and darkness, they encounter heaven. This is where the real journey of discovery occurs.

When a spirit enters a celestial city for the first time, they are usually taught the basics of spirit life. They need less nourishment, sunlight and water are perfectly adequate to meet all needs. They are able to travel by thought. Their minds are capable of creation, utilizing Universal Fluid. They are immortal. They still have responsibilities and are encouraged to work and take classes. Familiar and yet fantastic at the same time.

When we think of heaven, we imagine a winged being with all wisdom in place. Who needs nothing but to be directed to the human soul who requires assistance. Instead, our guardians are continually acquiring

knowledge. In between their service to humanity or to each other, they are learning. The spirit universe(s) is vast and diverse – there is much to comprehend.

As an example of possible courses of study, the spirit Camilo Branco, tells us of what courses of study he was taking. Camilo was a suicide, who was rescued and taken to a spiritual center high in the lower zone. It was a combination hospital, university, and colony. After he recovered his harmony and was ready to encounter life, he was transferred to the residential area where he could take classes.

Here is a list of subjects that he was taught:

1. The Planetary Genesis or Cosmogony – Prehistory
2. The Evolution of the Being
3. The Immortality of the Soul
4. The Three-Fold Human Nature
5. The Faculties of the Soul
6. The Law of Successive Existences in Physical Bodies, or Reincarnation
7. Psychological Medicine
8. Magnetism – Notions of Transcendental Magnetism
9. Christian Morality
10. Psychology – Earthly Civilizations
11. Understanding the Gospel

These were not just classroom experiences but included field trips and practical applications. Each subject was related to the teachings and demonstrative acts and examples of Christ. This should be of no surprise, since Christ was one of the spirits who formed the Earth and guided our evolution and history throughout the ages.

Hence there is more than ethical teachings, there is imparted an understanding of the construction and processes of the spirit universe. Only

with an understanding of the foundation upon which a spirit stands, can he or she clearly discern the path to a moral high ground.

Many classes are incredibly fun. The Rev. G. Vale Owen's mother told him about a class where they were learning to use their minds to create. She was a member of a group of spirits, in one of the lower levels of heaven. They were just learning to harness the power of their minds.

The group was tasked with making a statue of an elephant. They all commenced concentrating and focusing their will power upon the pedestal on which the elephant would stand.

What appeared was far from perfect. Parts materialized like a statue and parts like a real elephant. Dimensions of certain physical attributes were off. They all laughed and had a good time. But they did learn that they must plan together and share a common vision of what they would create in the future.

They also were provided feedback with a gauge and readout. They discovered that when they created an object, the instrument would display the composition of the Universal Fluid being used and other vital properties.

Hence, from the very beginning, spirits passing through the narrow door to heaven are being prepared for greater responsibility. Creating a statue is the first step in fashioning a planet or developing life on other planets.

Children who are being raised in heaven also learn from their earliest years how their minds function in the spirit realm. They play a game, designed to master deep concentration. The children form two lines with a path in between. A lone child walks down the path with a ball held in front of him by the power of his mind. As he walks down the middle, youngsters on either side, use the force of their thoughts to push or pull the ball away from the lone child. Sometimes the two rows will work together, one side pushes and the other side pulls, forcing the solo participant to gather his complete focus to control the ball.

At another classroom, the students were given a challenge. There was a rather large male bird in the rafters. The children had to fashion a method to cause the bird to descend, without forcing the bird with their will power.



The children solved the problem, by manufacturing a female bird of the same species out of smaller birds.

They utilized the auras, the logic behind each of the smaller birds to accumulate the required structures to assembly a copy of the bird in the rafters, albeit a female. After the female was assembled, it let out a cry, enticing the male bird down.

This example illustrated two important points. First, they were being trained to consider free will. Eventually, when they are sent on missions to assist, they shall have to entice incarnates to or not to perform certain actions without commanding them – which they could do very easily. They must acquire the skills to be able to subtly guide them.

Secondly, the exercise perfectly demonstrated, the application of disparate logical modules to create a larger one. In other words, by borrowing parts from one or more creatures, they could create a different one. Like using building blocks, connectors, and computer chips to build a robot – all from ready-made components.

It all appears so normal, learning in classrooms, lectures, field trips. Yet the basis is fantastical. We are not learning by doing with our hands, but by our minds. Our force of will, concentration, focus, and determination is the raw generator of our power. Power that must be regulated by acquired knowledge and moral elevation – otherwise such an overwhelming force may be used for evil instead of good.

Life on Earth, brutal and uncaring as it may seem to be, is the driver leading us down the path to character and personality reformation in order to be ready to assume abilities beyond our imagination.

### **Traversing the Universal Database**

Education does not end with a focus on our own abilities and the composition of the spirit universes, but also how to connect to the foundational reality of the spirit realm – all data, knowledge, events, past and possible future actions of every person, planet, and solar system in every galaxy.

Living information which can be accessed, analyzed, and acted upon for our benefit. Imagine a connection in your brain, upon command you could

peer into any database, program, display, images, or text in any computer or storage bank on our planet. Then realize that this is nothing compared to what is available in the spirit realm – for those at a level high enough to take advantage of this prospect.

As with anything else important in our lives, we must be trained to traverse the intelligent ether. There is an example of a class where a spirit teacher instructs his students to lie down on a soft green field in an idyllic setting. They were on the seventh level of heaven. He tells them to aim their focus on peace and tranquility. Feel the love of the spirit world and let their minds wander. After a short period to allow everyone to relax, he asked one of the students what she saw.

The student replied:

“There was a great highway which ran along a wood-side, and on the other side of the road there was a river. At one place there ran down to the side of the river a broad flight of steps, and within the wood opposite there stood a large house. People were landing from boats which came to pause below the steps, one by one continuing. These people ascended to the roadway and, crossing it, entered the gates and passed within where the wood bordered a road each side. Near the house the road was clear of trees, and the house stretched right and left facing the wood across its clearing.

The people went forward, some into the house and others into the garden or the wood. Others stood in groups conversing.” [\[20\]](#)

She then went on:

“At the gates there stood two men. They were of great strength and beauty. They looked across the river and, now and again, one or the other lifted up his hands as signal. When he did this there came a beam of light across the waters, and it rested for a moment on house or road or wood. Its coming and its going were prompt and decisive, as if those who sent it had perfect knowledge where it should find its quarry, what quarry it should be, and also why.” [\[21\]](#)

She did not fully understand the scene and the context of her vision. The instructor explained what she saw:

“The scene was cast, not in one of those spheres ahead of us, but two spheres behind. That is to say, the river was the boundary thereabouts between Spheres Five and Four. Now those who live there be good people, but not quite at ease from the influences which from time to time invade the Sphere Four from the Sphere Three, where disturbances often arises, in its turn, from those regions next Earth.

Nothing much can invade the Sphere Four in this manner. What untoward influences are able to rise into it do not harm, but only hinder and retard. They have the faculty of circumscribing the freedom of those who, being progressive, yet still a certain affinity with Earth. Such affinity is consequent sometimes on their having loved ones still in the flesh, or some enterprise agait in the world may be of interest to them still, or other cause obtain.

When those people, therefore, crossed over into the Sphere Five they had need of watchfulness by guardians placed in different parts where they first would wander. Those at the gates were two such watchers. Seeing some sign of weakness or distress among these others newly come, they at once signaled and received at once information as to the character, progress and present estate of such person as they made enquiry about. Also, a ray of strength was sent upon the person in question. These rays were visible only to the watchers, and not to those on whom they were directed. They were visible also to the two children because these were of a higher sphere. They did not understand transactions as these they witnessed because they thought the sphere into which they gazed was higher than their own. But it was of lower degree than their own.” [\[22\]](#)

Hence, the beams were lights of help and assistance. This illustrates that we are not only watched on earth but on the spirit planes as well.

The students were not astral traveling to see the visions, they were internalizing. They were assimilating the energy, mental and directive, of the informational atmosphere into themselves. Thus, they were able to select bits of it and experience visions.

I know of a medium, he does not talk to spirits, spirits do not talk to him. He does not see visions. Instead, he can plug into the universal database and follow logical pathways. Like the students, he may

misinterpret what he detects. I know this because when he has told me about items I am involved with. I can spot his errors and understand how he could be mistaken, because he lacks the overall context.

He “sees” bits of images, text, feelings, and connections to other items. He follows the pointers from one data point to another. When he enters this world, he is like a wanderer in a great city. Buildings are tall and splendid, the streets are lively, and the hustle and bustle of people in motion are everywhere. Having no knowledge of the city, the wanderer must approach by instinct, following his intuition to arrive at his desired destination.

What he sees and experiences pass by in flashes. He lacks the time to sit quietly and analyze every oddity he detects. For he too is in motion, gliding along the streets. Hence his understanding is not complete. An improved comprehension will come in time, after he has moved up in the spiritual hierarchy.

### **Graduation from One Level to Another**

Each level in the heavens surrounding the Earth has its own system of schools and colleges. The system is similar to what we have in our physical domain. There are smaller feeder institutions in the less populated villages, then larger colleges in the colonies, and lastly, a considerable sized university in the major city at each level.

Students start from small to large, they finish up in a big city, studying with other students, or performing research and missions with teams. No one is forced to attend any classes or schools. If a spirit is satisfied with their level of knowledge, they may remain where they are for as long as they desire.

Periods of education may be interspersed with definite tasks in different types of organizations, such as a governmental or a non-governmental group. Spirits will work with their friends and mentors to layout possible paths. Some may wish to remain in their present position and not move on until they no longer gain satisfaction from their current profession.

The spirit Andre Luiz, living in the celestial city Nosso Lar, reports that Minister Veneranda, one of the twelve ministers in the Department of Regeneration, who reports directly to the Governor of Nosso Lar, has

served in her capacity for over two hundred years. It was also revealed that she received the Merit of Service award for reaching one million hours of untiring devotion to the progress of humanity.

Hence, there is a wide range of spirits sticking to a particular assignment for long periods of time to short duration tasks. It all depends upon the inclinations of the individual spirit.

While Nosso Lar is located in the lower level of heaven, Minister Veneranda lives on a higher level and comes to Nosso Lar to perform her duty. Therefore, a spirit is not restricted to their own level when it comes to work or study.

There is a wide range of accommodations for spirits to work within multiple levels, including Earth and the regions below heaven. Nevertheless, the path to attain higher levels travels through work and study.

I do not believe there is a set number of classes in a certain order to graduate. From the literature I have read, there is an informal combination of lectures, research, and on the job training. Therefore, there is no mandate that when a certain class is completed, a person is promoted to the next level.

It is an organic process, whereby the entire perspective, readiness, spirituality, and knowledge possessed by a spirit is analyzed to determine if they are ready and able to function at a superior level. The spirit realm absolutely desires everyone to be successful when they are promoted.

But why do people wish to ascend, if any level of heaven is such a wonderful place to live? I believe the answer lies in their desire to assist us to climb up the steep ladder to one day become a pure spirit. Each successive plateau bestows greater responsibility and opportunity to perform good works. Each step entails more intellectual challenge and personal satisfaction.

When the goal of a person is to help mankind as much as possible, the lure of attaining the capability to help even more than before is irresistible. With the additional bonus of feeling oneself to be an important part of the machinery to move humanity forward.

It is vital to realize that promotion is not just recognition of attaining a new level – it is also a physical transformation. It is a new set of permissions to travel, query, connect, and utilize a new range of faculties. Abilities which greatly expand a spirit's potential to plug into the spirit realm's vast array of information and power.

The addition of new power is not limited to moving from one level to another. Ofttimes, when a spirit is assigned a new task or position, they are gifted expanded capabilities. Such as when a person is appointed governor of a city, they receive enhanced stamina and functionality so they may effectively manage their organization.

### **Promotion to Lead a New Race**

When the human race on Earth was beginning, before Atlantis and Lemuria rose to power, there were two young individuals who stood out from the primitive tribesman of the day. When they passed away to the other side, their excellence was recognized. They were trained for eons, until they knew enough to lead the destiny of another planet.

Their mission was to lead the evolution of a new race on a primitive planet. They had both experienced the process of spiritual and intellectual advancement through many incarnations and via long periods of study at various universities in the bands of heaven surrounding the Earth. Supplementing their knowledge, they were sent, in spirit, to many worlds, with many races, shapes and cultures to explore. Thusly, they would attain the required experience to guide the proto-humans of a new planet.

They were a man and a woman, who did not meet on the planet, but much later as they were rising. I cannot tell exactly when they were first on Earth, but if they were both present before any civilization appeared, then they could have been associated with our planet for more than fifty thousand years. Hence, the climb to godhead is long.

They would not lead the budding race without consultation from high spirits; they would spend time on the planet, then come back to Earth to review their progress and plans, while another team would exercise their guidance in the meantime.

These two were not alone, they oversaw an entire organization empowered to this vital task. Therefore, they must have been leaders of

complex departments involved in the affairs of our orb before they were promoted.

The arc of their lives illustrates two points. First, promotion to a position of awesome responsibility is a marathon, not a sprint. It can only be seen correctly in light of our immortality. One life, two, three, hundreds and thousands of lives are still small compared to eternity.

Secondly, learning deliberately, improving one's personality, attaining near perfection in every assignment are the requirements. The mad rush we experience to succeed rapidly. The urge to glorify ourselves at the expense of others. Ambition unbridled is the norm today. In heaven, it is the way of the tortoise, slow and plodding, sure and steady. In no hurry, except to improve oneself. This is how we should see our lives, as but one small steppingstone in a procession reaching out to the horizon. With the realization of immortality and reincarnation, no one should give up educating themselves, and improving their capacity for love and charity. No dreams should be abandoned since there is always time to achieve them.

These two shining examples of ascension did not leave for their mission without a ceremony. The spirit realm believes in communal celebration, as an example of solidarity and love in every endeavor. It serves to cement the presence of active and passive encouragement that is part of the atmosphere of heaven.

The spirit Arnel described the throng of onlookers present at the ceremony to send off the two leaders and their group for a new mission on a primitive planet. He said the multitude was like the cells of a body, for they all were in harmony with each other. As the people stood ready, a cloud appeared overhead:

“The cloud was of green tint streaked with spirals of amber within itself, and capped with a canopy of blue. This cloud was continuously in motion, and at length grew into the shape of a stately pavilion whose roof was of the deepest blue-violet and the pillars of semitransparent green and amber. There were in all seven pillars round the sides and back of the semicircular shape, and also two on each side of the main opening in front. These last two were of deep violet, with spiral bands of crimson edged with white. All were pulsing with the life of those who were willing this gem of beauty into being, and from the structure

proceeded a murmur of melody most lovely to feel – for we did not so much hear it as feel it. It is often real to feel sound here than it is with you to hear it.” <sup>[23]</sup>

Next Arnel tells us about the two leaders, those from deep antiquity of earth. The first was a woman:

“Then within the chariot there emerged into sight of us a beautiful young woman. She was facing us, and I noted all her loveliness, and, as I looked upon her, I saw nothing else for the exceeding beauty of her. Her body was of a tint you do not know. I will call it amber, but it was not the same tone as the amber of the pillars, but of more radiance and transparency, and yet with an aspect of reality and permanency which those wanted. She wore a robe of blue gossamer, but where it covered her body the two hues blended and became a delicate green. On her arms were bands of purple metal. She wore upon her hair a small cap of deep red with a thin band of white and gold, and her hair was brown with a sheen of orange upon it, as if it were touched by a ray of the sun at setting-time. And her eyes were deep purple and blue.” <sup>[24]</sup>

Arnel continued his description and called her a “Mother-Queen, a maidenhood, a spirit brooding over a race of people.” <sup>[25]</sup> She exemplified a call to action, her very presence made others feel a sense of urgency of purpose. While, simultaneously, she radiated a peaceful and calming feeling that provided focus to whatever task her attendants would be given.

The aura she possessed is only possible by thousands of years of experience, training, and dedication. The “Mother-Queen” began, as did we, an ignorant spirit, but using her innate humility, openness to criticism, and native intelligence, she rose to a great height. Her ability to always combine love, wisdom, and kindness placed her as a natural choice to guide the evolution of intelligence life on a primitive planet.

Then a young man came into the hall. The second spirit who was part of our earth during prehistoric times. Arnel provides this report:

“He was the woman in masculine duplicate. One was the complement and counterpart of the other. In only one thing did he seem dissimilar. His robe was of a slightly ruddier tint. I did not notice aught else of moment to mark one from the other. Even sex was expressed rather in



spirit than bodily. Albeit, in form she was emphatically woman, and he man.” [26]

### **The Journey**

This is the journey of a spirit. It began as we are now beginning, in a life of desire for more. Accumulation of selfish aims – land, houses, wealth, lovers, and fame. Nothing should stand in our way to attainment. No action is too reprehensible for us to not consider.

Via multiple lives, planned out and guided by spirits, who have felt as we did once, our attitudes slowly evolve. We become aware of our conscience, of a divine spark which resides within us. A presence of God and of goodness that cannot be denied. For it is so powerful, it wears us down. Gradually and inexplicably eroding our propensity to pride and selfishness.

All spirits will travel this path. Some straight and true, making remarkable progress and others with long detours via crimes which are too horrible to recollect. Nevertheless, it shall be tread. It is unavoidable, for God has instilled in us a desire toward goodness, fairness, and justice. Christ through his numerous servants helps us to find the right road.





## **Section 3 – Spiritual Ascension**

We have reviewed the journey of a spirit. It is something that can be seen with a sense of detachment. An intellectual exercise sans emotion. But in practice it is a mess. Cruelty, corruption, ignorance, and naked selfishness are swirling around us in our daily life. Why must this be so?

The answer is - the process of perfection demands it.

### **What is Perfection**

I do not pretend to fully understand the state of perfection for a spirit. Nevertheless, we can come to a beginning of the requirements for being a perfected spirit. A soul must be loving, caring, wise, giving, charitable, fraternal, and honest. In other words, to us on Earth they must act like our idealized form of our grandmother or grandfather, wise and loving, always kind, cheerful, and helpful. Never mean, rarely yells. Always positive and supporting. With a measure of certainty of purpose and ability to give clear guidance.

Our best example of a pure spirit is Christ. He was patient and loving to all. People may point out the exception when He drove out the money changers from the temple. This may be an example of being indignant and focused, not angry, to make a point. Other than that episode, which can be interpreted as one desires, Christ is a paragon of virtue.

Others that approach His character are Socrates, Confucius, and Buddha. All remarkable humans who came to Earth to light the path for our benefit. The common thread for all these people can be better described by what they did not do. They did not abuse their fellow humans. They did not take more than they gave back. They did not dominate, instead they taught. They did not cause emotional turmoil amongst their adherents, instead they attempted to calm. They did not instigate violence, instead they tried to mitigate it.

Were all these great examples of purity of soul and purpose, born out of the womb with exemplarily character? No, their personality had been developed over time. A span of ages and lives that would be remarkable to us if we knew the actual number.

And it is no mistake that each of those mentioned above are high spirits. Superior in level to most of the spirits in the heavens circling our planet. They did not arrive at their destination by chance. On the contrary, they went through a veritable meat grinder. A trek that turned their bad qualities into good ones, that forced each of them to deep introspection and moral transformation. They went through the process of perfection.

### **The Process of Perfection**

The process of perfection is God's plan to turn simple logical structures into free willed unique personalities who are a force for good. It is said there are two things you do not want to know how they are made, laws and sausages. There is a third, a pure spirit.

All spirits live and work in the spirit realm. We can either be of assistance or useless to the leaders of the spirit universe. Like any corporation on our world, management desires to improve their employees. The better the workforce, the more efficient the company.

God could have dictated that every spirit be made perfect. Then the spirit world would be a monotony of sameness. God would have assistants who would be devoid of original thinking. All would work smoothly, but without the beauty of variability.

Additionally, with uniformity comes a primary defect. A herd that encounters a deadly disease survives because they are different, some live and others die. But a herd composed of exact clones, would all die. Therefore, if an existential threat was present, it may devour all, if there is no flexibility in response.

Hence, the process must create a perfect spirit, but that spirit must have its own personality, its own character, and its own imaginative thoughts and manners. The primary ingredient to promote uniqueness is free will. Without the extreme variability of countless of spirits making thousands of free will choices in their lives the dark clouds of similarity would cover us. Instead, diversity of thought is everywhere.

The problem is diversity of thought promotes chaos, which fosters violence, conflicts, pettiness, crimes, and primitive passions everywhere one looks. It creates a place where good people are victims of random

violence, where innocents starve, where the corrupt live luxurious lives. In essence, it creates the current and past state of Earth.

If one examines any single point in time on our planet, the entire process appears to be a catastrophic failure. This is why humans throughout the ages have attempted to impose draconian systems to enforce their idea of “equality” and “justice”, which invariably results in more pain and suffering. Communism, fascism, dictatorships, oligarchies, and socialism have always resulted in eventual stagnation for an entire society governed by an entrenched ruling class.

While the laissez-faire form of government seems to promote the strong over the weak, it does set the stage for a highly dynamic social atmosphere which supplies opportunities for education for all levels of spirits. It also allows individuals to determine what they can do to help others. It strengthens the power of the individual to force change – moral transformation – in their culture. Promoting self-discipline and a code of voluntary service to others is one step in guiding spirits to the right path.

I am not promoting any one form of governmental philosophy; I am pointing out that the very chaos we are trying to resolve is the grease which moves along the heavy weight of humanity to their eventual destination.

### **Spiral Progress**

Governments, like any dynamic organism or colony, experiences phases of growth, then retrenchment, then growth again. As it adapts to its surroundings and threats, it works out a plan for survival. And inherent in that plan is progress.

There is no smooth path to perfection. The spirit realm understands this. Negative attributes must be destroyed, while positive ones retained. It entails a cycle of destruction and regrowth, whereby the foundation is built stronger each time.

High spirits have told us that the earth’s evolution has illustrated the story of the remnants of quick evolutionary species which proved, in the end, to be inadequate manifestations. On the other hand, they were useful in setting the stage for the next great leap. Therefore, the spiral shape of progress, one species or an entire ecology progresses and dominates, but can only reach a certain plateau, whereupon they must be discarded.

An example is the growth of dinosaurs and even the extremely large mammals that we uncover as ancient fossils, as proof of the destruction and subsequent rise of a superior replacement.

We, as humans stand upon the platform of all animals that have come before us. Only by experimentation, learning through failures and successes, were we able to be thusly constructed.

Darwin, in his book *Origins of the Species*, saw this struggle and deemed nature to be the guiding hand. But there is also the invisible orchestration by the spirit realm, in facilitating Earth's major periods and making subtle changes in DNA to push natural selection to perform its duty.

Diversity of species has its purpose. It is to create as many avenues as possible for spirits at all levels to train themselves to control and command disparate lifeforms. This is one aspect of spiral progress.

The other arm of the intertwining spirals is the first part of the journey of spirits into the realm of matter. On one hand vehicles are being prepared and on the other spirits are inhabiting these life forms.

By adapting themselves to the corporeal body, the spirit is not only entering new life, with new rules, but also diving into the full expressions of primitive emotions – selfishness, pride, anger, jealousy. As our globe has evolved, so has our materialistic instincts strengthened.

All of this seems counterintuitive. Spirits come from one God, one realm, with no need for accumulating goods or dominating others. Nevertheless, there is a purpose, it is to set us on the next cycle of progress. From the material to the spiritual, from diversity to unity.

There is no firmer foundation for a rational human for a belief than having held the opposite idea and discovering the absolute lack of benefit of it. Our journey must take us to the nastier destinations so we may fully appreciate the beauty of our eventual goal.

Hence, humanity must be finely calibrated to determine the balance of materiality and spirituality and our collective readiness to receive superior levels of technology. To use new inventions for progress and not for the accumulation of wealth and power.

Therefore, as spirals denote an upwards and downwards path, but constantly progressing, so too has our history been played out. Deep in ancient history there has been spurts of human technological progress, but without the spiritual maturity to guide the use of it. Our story is not of constant progress, inventions, cultural and societal improvements, but one of development, dead ends, restarts and recalibrations. All deemed required to bring us to a point where we may begin the journey upwards with the correct foundational moral principles.

This process is not something unique to Earth. It is tried and true and is on-going throughout the physical cosmos.

High spirits have explained that providing material progress to humankind and human-like souls in other planets too early in their progress has unforeseen consequences and that civilizations have had to be reset to put in harmony the physical and spiritual journeys of immature spirits.

We have been told that we have been too technically advanced in relation to our spiritual progress in the past. The destruction of Atlantis and Lemuria attests to that. Spirits have implied that at some points in the far and distant past humans reached a material plateau but were not ready to embark on the road to reclaim their spirituality.

Now, it is different. The heavens above us, led by Jesus, the leader of our planet, has determined that we are ready to begin the second part of the long trek. From crass materialism to enlightened spirituality. From disparate races to an eventual conglomeration of a superior race. A race fit to live on a planet of regeneration.

### **Examples of Spiral Progress**

While the sinking of the continent of Atlantis provides a good example of a culture with advanced technology, but not the spiritual maturity to manage it, there are more recent demonstrations of entire societies allowed to practically disappear in order to rise up once again, but with a different perspective.

One can detect the hand of the spirit realm in the collapse of civilization in the thirteenth to twelfth century B.C., also known as the Late Bronze Age Collapse or the Invasion of the Sea People. Entire cultures were wiped out –

Minoans, Mycenaeans, Trojans, Hittites, and Babylonians. Only the Egyptians survived intact, but even it declined after the experience.

Historians are still attempting to piece together what could have caused such a general rout of ancient empires. The simple explanation of an outside invasion does not fully explain the practical erasure of long living societies.

The spirit world also took a hand in the destruction of Rome, as reported in a book, psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier in 1939. Emmanuel, Chico's spirit mentor and author of the book, *On the Way to the Light*, explained what happened to Rome:

“The Roman Empire could have effected the founding of a sole State on the planet due to the marvelous unity it achieved and thanks to the efforts and watch-care from On High; but instead, it disappeared in a sea of ruins after its wars, aberrations and circuses filled with wild beasts and gladiators.

The enormous organism began rotting away in the open sores opened by the negligence and impiety of its children, and when the palliative of mercy from selfless and compassionate spirits was no longer possible due to the galvanization of the overall sentiment on the broad table of earthly excesses and pleasure, suffering was called in to reestablish the fundamentals of the truth in souls.

Nothing was left of the proud city of the emperors except piles of stone. Under the lash of expiation and suffering, guilty spirits changed their garments in order to evolve and redeem themselves in the infinite scenery of life; and while many of them continue to weep in redemptive suffering, the sad and lamenting winds of the night mourn over the ruins of Vespasian's Colosseum.” <sup>[27]</sup>

The theme of the above paragraphs is that raw power, with the backing of technology and superior organization can and will dominate other groups, but that power without kindness and compassion for conquered subjects or allies will – eventually – cause the spirit world to withdraw its support, thereby initiating a decline. That advanced technology without the guidance of spiritual maturity in its use will result in tragedy.

But tragedy can be looked at as but one curve of the spiral. A society climbs to the pinnacle of civilization, proves inadequate in softening its



approach to all humans – chaos commences – out of the ashes are chastised spirits who will make a better attempt the next time.

While history can be viewed as invention, expansion and subsequent decline, the intermediate growth of spirituality by the waves of reincarnations by spirits, who once led great empires, now toiling on farms, sets up a subsequent growth, better grounded in morality.

One can see from Rome, where slaves outnumbered freemen, to the rise of European powers, where slavery was eventually abolished. The slow evolution of the perspective of souls being incarnated, as they gathered experience in multiple lives over the course of centuries. Certainly, there are still cruelties and injustices, but overall, the successive government organizations are more inclusive and just to its citizens.

In the nineteenth century, Europe made great strides in governments and institutions, but their history of colonization was a black mark. Emmanuel, again in the book, *On the Way to the Light*, states:

“Condemned to irreversible sentences for its social and political crimes, European dominance will disappear forever like the Roman Empire, handing over to the Americas the fruit of its experiences with a view to the civilization of the future.” <sup>[28]</sup>

The spirit realm had already planned the destruction of European power even before World War II had begun. The spiral of history continues.

Hence, the invisible hand that governs and leads us is only transparent to us. Individual spirits with the required skills and attitudes are strategically placed within countries, cultures, and societies to provide a path to spiritual ascension. The road has no shortcut. In fact, it is winding and extremely dangerous. Many have perished along its curves.

Nevertheless, over the course of time unimaginable to mere humans, ground is being covered. And as we are part and parcel of that road, we need to not be discouraged by the short-term disasters that confound our lives, or the disappointments we find in the governmental and corporate organizations around us. We need to invest in our own spirituality, for us to be one more paving stone in the road ahead.

## **The Long View**

Instead of taking one instance of time, move back and look over millennia. Not only over the history of Earth, but over the view of thousands of incarnations for a single spirit.

Once the perspective is withdrawn from a short span of time, the march forward of the entire human race and even individuals can be detected. Via active spirit manipulation of human and physical events upon the Earth, the race has progressed. People are less likely to be murdered. Whole cities less likely to be conquered and all inhabitants enslaved. Massive environmental damage is less likely to be tolerated.

I am not denying that we still have people dying or governments attempting to enslave their populations by more sophisticated means. Nevertheless, the world is experiencing a collective sense of basic morality. The acceptance of might makes right is no longer universal or even close. Governments must at least fake being caring about their citizens. The era of pervasive terror of a population is rapidly closing.

Then peer deeper into the graph of a single person over the course of thousands of years. That isolated soul most probably matured from a rapacious pirate, who took what they wanted, to a struggling middle manager, attempting to survive in a morally deprived corporate culture.

Hence, there is a small rising slope of improvement. Not if you only notice a period of one lifetime. Hundreds of years to thousands of years should be the range of measurement. Only then can you detect the slow march of humanity toward a planet of regeneration. A planet where war and conflicts are erased. Where hate, jealousy, and injustice are greatly reduced.

We are headed in the right direction. Through all the smoke and fire of our collective behavior, actual progress is being made. And it is being accomplished, not in spite of, but because of the observed brutality of ourselves.

For each injustice experienced, one more soul makes the solemn promise to not ever subject that to another person. Each bad free willed choice acted upon, causes others to reject the premise of that decision. We are living in a dynamic experiment where order will emerge from chaos, due to the collective past and present observations of its participants, who

shall demand an organization based upon Divine Law – love, fraternity, charity, and honesty shall be the foundation of our coming society.

This is the great secret of our progress – Evil is used to combat evil. The more it is exposed, the more it is abhorred. People on our planet, with their consciences implanted by God, are fundamentally unable to accept evil over a long period of time. They will at first manage to live with it, then to try and ignore it, then to escape, and lastly to fight it – this will occur over the span of multiple lives – as each person learns to listen to their inner voice.





## Chapter 7 – Our Beginning and Journey

We have discussed the process whereby collective humanity is shown the path to ascension in the previous chapter. There is a process of improvement for each of us. There is no one path, there are an infinite variety of avenues to attain perfection.

A spirit once expressed his acknowledgement of the difficulty of the human character. The seemingly infinite capacity for rapaciousness and cruelty. The hard headedness of the pride and vanity of each person. But he reflected that deep within the psyche, within the maze of the mind, with countless turns, representing terrible actions, lies at the end a beautiful garden, a place of love and sentimentality, that defies our outward appearance.

How did we, each one of us, individuals, begin? There is an explicit answer in *The Spirits Book* . The question appears to not pertain to answer the riddle of our beginning, but at the end it does.

*540. Do the spirits who exert an action over the phenomena of nature act with knowledge and intention, in virtue of their freewill, or from an instinctive end unreasoning impulse?*

"Some act in the one way, others in the other. To employ a comparison - Figure to yourself the myriads of animalcule that build up islands and archipelagos in the midst of the sea; do you believe that there can be, in this process, no providential intention, and that this transformation of the surface of the globe is not necessary to the general harmony? Yet all this is accomplished by animals of the lowest degree, in providing for their bodily wants, and without any consciousness of their being instruments of God. In the same way, spirits of the most rudimentary degrees are useful to the general whole; while preparing to live, and prior to their having the full consciousness of their action and free will, they are made to concur in the development of the various departments of nature, in the production of the phenomena of which they are the unwitting agents. They begin by executing the orders of their superiors; subsequently, when their intelligence is more developed, they command in their turn, and direct the processes of the material world; still later, again, they are able to direct the things of the moral world. It is thus

that everything in nature is linked together, from the primitive atom to the archangel, who himself began at the atom; an admirable law of harmony, which your mind is, as yet, too narrow to seize in its generality." [\[29\]](#)

“From the primitive atom to the archangel” is the key phrase. In it is a description of the whole of our long travel toward perfection. A journey of great duration, complexity, and achievements. Which takes us, step by step, from a primitive logical structure to a free willed independent personality. Each step a major plateau, with its own set of factors. But the focus of this chapter is the methods of learning after the acquisition of free will and what that means to us.

Our collective experiences up the road to free will status, leaves us with an insatiable desire to survive. It has taught us that selfishness and accumulation of resources is the key to continue in our primitive physical lives. These and the associated primitive emotions – hate, anger, jealousy, and violence are the foundations of our character. Primitive tribesmen exhibit all these in complete nakedness. The seeds of cooperation – love, fraternity, charity, and honesty – lie dormant, with an occasional awakening.

Only hard knocks, life lessons designed to make one think about the usefulness of our baser thoughts, feelings, and actions can chip away at the cement of our foundational character. Like boot camp, where a recruit is broken down, erased of his or her previous perceptions, and then rebuilt according to military discipline – we too must slowly discard the old methods of life and replace them with new cooperative processes.

Spirits have described this process in various ways – as the white heat in a kiln transforming us – as pain the great teacher – as suffering in order to change. All true and all profound. But not comforting if seen in isolation. Only in the grander context of life as a high spirit can one recognize the necessity of such a journey and the rewards at arriving at a destination that is beauty beyond our imagination.

### **Action and Reaction**

The notion of karma, action and reaction, has been presented to us since ancient times. The spirit world keeps sending us this message hoping that a tiny portion listen to the true implications in paying for wrongful deeds.

In the book, *Jesus, Buddha, Krishna & Lao Tzu*, by Richard Hooper. He compares similar passages in different combinations of four religious prophets. He, and others before him, analyze who was first to create the tenets and who borrowed what idea from whom. Whereas Spiritists realize there are many similarities because they were sent to earth to preach the same doctrine. Each slightly affected by different cultures and times.

Jesus: Be merciful that you may obtain mercy. Forgive, so that you may be forgiven. As you judge, so you will be judged. As you serve, so will service be done to you. And whatever you measure out, that is what will be returned to you. [The Gospel According to Matthew]

Krishna: Everyone creates their own fate. Even life in the womb is affected by the karma from a previous life. [The Garuda Purana]

Buddha: From a sound, an echo returns. A body creates a shadow. So, too, will misery come to him who does evil works. [Three Sermons] <sup>[30]</sup>

All three are in accordance with the Doctrine of Spiritism. Our actions in one life shall affect our next life. How much plainer could all three be?

And yet people still insist on committing wrong deeds. Why? Because many do not believe that we truly are immortal spirit beings who come to earth to learn and pay our debts. They see no absolute proof; therefore, they rationalize their actions to fit their one observable life.

All very logical. If we genuinely believe that we are here for a solitary existence, then there should be nothing in the way for us to commit any act we desire. Except for that little thing implanted into every living free willed soul on earth – a conscience.

God has implanted into us a set of Divine Laws. As we begin our journey from primitive to mature spirit, we learn to listen and to expand upon our interpretation of the Divine Laws. God has also sent our instinct – built up over countless lives – it serves us in many situations.

Conscience and instinct are the tethers that connect us to the spirit realm. No matter how strenuously we deny any higher power, they serve to bind us to an eternal truth – we are more than dust, we are more than one life, we have a purpose.

The general theme of our stories of travelling through one life after another is ignorance, then ignoring, then the first inkling, then rationalization, and finally the acceptance of our conscience. Only by complete and utter adherence to the dictates of Divine Law can we rise.

What causes this transformation? Karma.

### **Consequence of Karma and the Physical Body**

There is an example of the downstream results of actions taken in the book *Between Heaven and Earth*. Julio, a man who committed suicide by poisoning himself, discovers that his throat is an object of pain for him even in the spirit world. How will he repair his pain and his wrongful act of suicide? The spirit Clarencio explains to the spirit Andre Luiz:

“When by acts contrary to the Divine Law, our mind harms the harmony of any one of our soul’s force centers, it is naturally enslaved to the effects of the unbalancing action, thus making the toil of readjustment necessary. In Julio’s case, he is the author of disturbance in the ‘throat center’, an alteration expressed by an infirmity or imbalance that will by necessity go with him into reincarnation.’

‘How will he cleanse the deficiency?’ I asked (Andre Luiz, spirit author of *Between Heaven and Earth*), edified by the explanation I had just heard.

‘Julio will have to live with pain in his throat, thus healing himself by correcting the vibratory tonus of the ‘throat center’ and reestablishing it to normality.’

‘Julio will be reborn in a physiologically defective body, which will somehow portray the injured area, his throat. He will suffer intensely from the vocal organ, which will undoubtedly be characterized by weak resistance to microbial attacks. In virtue of our friend having scorned the blessing of a physical body, he will be faced with dreadful struggles in order to learn how to appreciate it instead.’” [\[31\]](#)

Whichever part of the body we abuse in one life will be affected in the next. Socrates, the ancient Greek philosopher, knew what he was talking about when he said, “Everything in moderation, nothing in excess”, over two thousand five hundred years ago. Keep in mind the seven force centers



and check your excesses. If you are having problems in one or more areas, then you should know exactly what to work on in your present life. This is reinforced by one of the team members commenting to Clarencio, “So, we must attribute an important role to infirmities in the human realm because most of them play an important role in the regeneration of souls.” <sup>[32]</sup>

The statement above contradicts all that we modern humans have learned. We are told sickness is caused by viruses, bacteria, and other environmental factors alone, having nothing to do with our own behavior. To believe so puts us back in the eras of superstition. Back then, when an ailment occurred, the first thing a person would ask is, “Why is God punishing me?” or “What did I do wrong to deserve this?” Could there be, perhaps, truth in the real cause of our troubles? Are we then supposed to ask, when a bad illness strikes us, “What should I improve in my life to not have this occur again?” The answer is a qualified “Yes”.

Although, as taught by Spiritism, viral and bacterial infections can still occur naturally and thus we are encouraged to use the services of medical professionals when we have any problems. The vital point is that the spirit world knows all, even each effect of our scientific advances, including what can be cured and what cannot be cured. We are programmed in our new life to experience trials; each trial is arranged with whatever assistance we may have from medicine considered.

Therefore, the major medical problems we exhibit are most probably planned before we are brought into this world. They are part of the plan to set hurdles before us, so we may strive to overcome them, and in doing so remove a petty primitive emotion and replace it with warmth and goodness. Once a person reaches a complete understanding that the Earth is a campus, designed, with the utmost efficiency, to turn us into better people, the pain of illnesses becomes logical.

The nice aunt who had cancer, or the uncle with severe heart symptoms are objects of pity and love in our day-to-day life. We believe they are innocent victims of random infections or their inherited DNA predispositions. Whereas, they are in the middle of their class, their learning experience. While it may not seem so, the ailment that strikes them is actually aimed at removing an unwanted emotion or base belief. The disease is the medicine sent to improve their life – their immortal spirit life.

Their temporary physical body is the method whereby their eternal personality is modified – healed – to remove their imperfections, to allow a greater spirit life to blossom. What we perceive as unfair punishment is the very medicine required to heal.

This concept is difficult to accept when we see our beloved family affected. After all, for the most part we do not detect a miraculous change in their character. Spirits have told us, that even they, who have had missions to guide a person along a certain path, do not understand the rationality for their tasks at the time. It is only much later that they comprehend the wisdom of their orders.

Transforming the character of a spirit is not a rapid operation and all is fine. It could last centuries over multiple lifetimes or expunge a retrogressed emotion in a flash – a last minute review of their life as they lay on their deathbed. We have been told that what may seem like seconds to us are small eternities to the soul in their death throes. The process can be different for each person. Forcing us to reevaluate our long-held beliefs is not an easy job.

We need to cast off our preoccupation with the body and focus on the soul. The body is perishable, the soul is eternal. We shall have countless coverings in our multiple lives. Some as Earth-shaped humans and some on other planets in slightly different forms. All are merely temporary residences, a place where we were sent on assignment to receive the training we so sorely needed.

### **We are Accountable for our Deeds**

In the back of our minds, when we perceive that someone is getting away with an illegal or unfair act, we say to ourselves that we hope karma catches up with them sometime in the future. The processes of the spirit realm dictate that it does – always – affect their current or their next life. It is unavoidable.

But that what we wish upon others functions just as constant upon us. The tragedies we experience in a seemingly random manner are not random nor undeserved. They are meant as teaching moments.

I will use myself as an example. Via messages sent to me and my wife during mediums meetings, conversations with mediums, and my

interpretation of events in my life, I have found certain great misdeeds in my past lives.

The first inkling of my wrongful acts and their consequences came with the first communication my wife and I received from the spirit realm. We had discovered Spiritism via the prophetic visions my wife had more than fourteen years before we meet. She had an accident and had a near death experience in a hospital in Brazil. She saw, in bits and pieces, her future laid out before her.

She was told she would encounter a foreigner and marry him. When she recovered, she was around seventeen at the time, she expected this man to quickly come into her life. He never appeared, or so it felt to a young adult who thought months were eons. By the time I did meet her, she was in her thirties and had dismissed the whole episode.

This should give us a clue about time in the spirit world. Our concept of time is different than the real world's appreciation of time. It does not exist, but they do realize that certain events will occur, and they sometimes attempt to give us a rough approximation as to the time for us on Earth. Therefore, one should strive to determine the change of states in relation to visions or prophetic words instead of set dates. The spirit world will usually tie one occurrence to another. Such as, an earthquake will shake a certain area, then after that, the promised event will happen. But there is no promise of the exact time span from one event to another. Hence, we should always see these as broad guidelines and constantly reevaluate our analysis of what we heard or saw. I am embarrassed to reveal that my wife and I constantly mis-interpret messages, and it is only after the fact that we discover that what we were told was true. It was our initial decoding of the communication that was in error.

About six months before we met, strange events began to occur. One example was she was sitting on a bench in front of a supermarket and a woman sat down beside her and told her events which would take place in her future. She listened, with little comprehension, until she remembered her near death experience. The two stories were eerily similar.

I flew into Rio de Janeiro from the United States. It was more than a month after the September 11<sup>th</sup>, terror attacks. The airport felt like a

science fiction episode – it was nearly empty. The flight was nearly empty. The queue for passport control at the Rio airport was negligible.

I went on a business meeting, but as I had time, I wanted a tour of the city. To my surprise, when I boarded the tour bus, I was the only English speaker on the bus, and I was assigned my own personal tour guide – she was my future wife.

We were married within a year. During our first years of marriage, she would tell me, always after the fact, that she remembered what just happened, that she had seen it in her near-death experience. Doubting her, I listened and let it pass.

Then she had a glimpse of the future. We were seeking to buy a home. We had spotted a house we wanted to make an offer on. When we arrived home, I called the real estate agent. To my surprise she told me there were two previous offers on the house. I told my wife this fact. She replied that we would indeed get the house. She had seen the house in her vision – the house had three trees in front – this would be ours for certain.

I did not remember the number of trees in front, so I suggested we drive back to count them. When we arrived, I said triumphantly, “Look there are four trees in front!” She replied, “Nevertheless, we shall have that house.”

The day after, the real estate agent called me and said the two offers fell through, and now we had the opportunity to buy the house. After we had lived in the house for about thirty days, a tremendous windstorm swept through and toppled one of the trees. Now our house had three trees in front!

Again, I quickly forgot the entire episode. Years later, in the year 2007, I was working for a bank. It was Washington Mutual. The bank had been growing rapidly and had been profiting from giving mortgages to people as the housing market was rising quickly. At the beginning of 2007, some analysts cautioned there may be trouble ahead. Our management told us that the bank was well positioned, and we could weather any storm.

I told my wife about the report. Then a look appeared in her eyes and she said, “Now I remember! You will work for a bank that will go bankrupt. But don’t worry because the same bank with a new name will hire you back.” Again, I responded with the same disdain.

In April or May, I am not sure of the month, a well-known and prosperous firm took an equity position in the bank. It was declared that we were now completely protected from any adverse event. As of yet the complete destruction of the housing market and the stock market had not occurred.

I was so confident that I moved my entire 401k savings into bank stock, trusting that our share price would reap great profits.

Then, in September, as my boss and I were entering the ferry at the Seattle Coleman dock after work, we heard on the loudspeaker that Washington Mutual was closed by the FDIC. I was now out of a job, lost all of my retirement savings, and had truly worked for a failed bank.

My loss of my savings was a great blow. In the past, I had been employed by two other companies that had been bought out. Each time I received a very generous severance package. My goal was to invest the money in the stock market so it would grow. Each time I did this I lost it all. And I did not invest, in what I thought were risky stocks. I had just picked the wrong companies at the exact wrong time. Or so I thought.

The bank failed around two weeks before the United States bailed out and protected every other bank in the country. Again, I was back at square one, with little liquid assets and no job.

When I arrived home, I told my wife everything. She told me not to worry, I would soon have a job at my old bank. Of course, I could not relax. I wrote my resume and started looking in one of the worst job markets at the beginning of the twenty-first century.

In the meantime, Washington Mutual was bought by J. P. Morgan, also known as Chase Bank. They kept my boss, who then proceeded to hire me back to the same bank but with a different name!

I was unemployed for about two months, in which I always came in second or third to every potential job prospect. All the while my wife repeated that I had nothing to worry about. Nothing to worry about! The absolute worst time to be unemployed! Looking back, I had stressed out for nothing. My fate was determined before I was born.

After this episode, I could no longer deny that my wife knew the future. It was this trigger that led me to discover Spiritism. A discovery that I was always destined to find.

Fast forward years, my wife and I had started a Spiritist Center in the state of Washington. We traveled to Rio, as we did many summers. We decided to go to a local Spiritist Center to see when and how they held their meetings. By chance, or so I thought, we ended up at the Seara Fraterna Spiritist Center in the Catate neighborhood in the city of Rio de Janeiro.

We met a wonderful woman who showed us around and has to this day remained our most precious mentor.

A week after we had first introduced ourselves, she asked us to a mediums meeting. We arrived and sat against the wall, while the mediums were placed at the table. During the meeting one of the mediums wrote down a message (psychographing) from a spirit. I will only review the pertinent portion of the message, in which we were told that my wife and I had overseen people and organizations in the past. That we had chosen to pursue treasure instead of helping those we were supposed to assist. We had failed time and time again. Hence, we were not corrupt characters just once, but many times! I quote, “you have failed and failed over and over.”

Therefore, I was never going to be allowed to retain any great stake of wealth. I was destined to feel what it was like to lose my wealth, just as I had probably looted others. Lucky for me, the spirit world in their infinite grace let me exist at a middle-class level. I cannot say I was ever deprived of any need. I just was never permitted to gain my desires.

Hence, those poor souls who I robbed and left alone in their misery, who wished that someday justice would be served, got their wish. And I fully recognize that my payback was light indeed.

At the time of my loses I whined, complained, and felt extremely sorry for myself. Now, with the enlightenment of Spiritism, I comprehend the lesson delivered. I do not require luxury, the large modern house, or the expensive car, or traveling by private jet. The necessities of life are comfort enough for me. I am freer without the burden of excessive possessions.

My personal journey of karma did not end there. I have done worse!

I found this out in bits and pieces, until the entire story came together. My friend had lost his job and I asked a medium friend of mine when he would procure employment. He answered that he would find a job. Then the medium told me that I worry for this friend because he took me in and cared for me when I was abandoned. Not knowing the context, I let this information pass.

Many months later I was in conversation with the same medium. Suddenly, he looked pensive for a moment and asked me if I ever had trouble with my feet. I told him no. But, at the time I had forgotten that I was born with a club foot, but it was cured by being in leg braces as a baby. I had no memory of this, only that which I was told later in my life. I suffered no consequences of my repaired foot, only a slight weakness of my ankles. Which I discovered when I tried to ice skate.

Then he told me that I had tortured people in their feet to make them talk about where their treasure was hidden. Also, that in the past I had cut off the feet of slaves so they could not escape. I told this to a friend, and he said this sounds exactly like you, since I tend to solve problems directly, without thinking of people's feelings.

I had to agree with him. Before I started to study Spiritism, I felt love and compassion only for my family.

Processing this information made me realize how much of a monster I really was. On the other hand, it also demonstrated how a horrible person is guided to reform in life after life. It should also remind us, to feel pity for the offender, since they will have justice delivered eventually.

I believe I know how my justice was sent. The reason I felt such concern for my friend was that I must have been born severely disabled in a previous life. Without legs or feet. He took me in when no one else wanted such a useless human being. My club foot was a remanence of my wrongs. Deep within my own heart I still felt the weight of my past and my perispirit – affected by my transgressions – facilitated by my being born with a club foot.

Interestingly, I have never been told of anything good I have ever done! The spirit realm knew well I would latch onto that and conveniently forgot the harm I had spread. Nevertheless, it was the right approach. For now, I

am living proof that a rascal, a liar, a tyrant, a torturer, and a thief can transform. Not into a completely good person yet, but at least an improved person, who has certainly committed grave errors in behavior, but not one who has transgressed the laws of humanity.

People often write to me and state how can they know how to change if they do not understand their past regressions. The answer is, they will be maneuvered into situations in which they shall learn. We sit here in our comfortable lives thinking we know best. The reality is we are but immature children with a minimum comprehension of our lives and our situation. Jesus, the leader of our planet, and his legion of angels working on our behalf has it figured out much better than we could ever understand. My advice is to go with the flow, continue striving to better yourself, analyze your behavior and situation, the path will be shown to you.

Once you open your eyes and see the effects of the spirit realm upon every detail in your life you shall begin the journey of achieving glory after glory – as a spirit once said.

### **Analysis of our Behavior**

We are not only given a map and then dropped on the Earth to follow it blindly. While careful plans are fashioned to modify our behavior, blueprints can be altered to better fit our present set of choices and moral status.

This can be detected in one of the main themes present in near death experiences – the Life Review. The concept of weighing the good and bad deeds upon death has been with us since before the invention of the written word. It is there because of people who had encounters with the spirit world, because of mediums, and prophets. All reporting that the great measuring of our performance is waiting.

In Spiritist literature and in numerous accounts of near-death experiences, the process is kindly and meant to illustrate, not to denigrate. This can be very stressful for those who seek to hide their misdeeds and are judged in the Lower Zones.

Those of kindly disposition and deportment in their earthly life have reported a meeting with friendly spirits. Many of whom are vaguely familiar. This inkling that a person knows a spirit but cannot quite place



them is due to the temporary haze of being still connected to the physical plane. These spirits present are most probably good friends and compatriots in the fight for improvement. They may have been following and lending assistance during the person's time on Earth.

The meetings are described as sitting around a table, with pleasant conversation to start. Then a person is led through key events in their life. These events are presented in hyper-reality. That is to say, the person watching the events feel they are there, they hear the thoughts of not only the key participant but of everyone that person encounters.

One person wrote that for the first time she felt the effect of her harsh words upon others. That she did not realize that everyone wishes to be honored and few meant to do wrong. She came back to her physical life with a changed attitude and tried her best to treat all with respect and kindness.

Another was shown the positive influences he would have upon his family if he chose to continue with his life. Also revealed was the negative consequences upon his father, mother, and sister, if he left his life early.

Hence, not only is everything recorded in our lives and the lives of those around us. But it can be queried and displayed upon command. In addition, scenarios can be constructed, and the different probability paths can be examined. Ponder the implication of the previous two sentences. Our greatest computers can barely monitor and predict weather patterns, which are complicated algorithms requiring massive amounts of data. Then think of an individual life, with thoughts and actions numbering into the millions each day and then add all the interactions and their thoughts and actions. All of which is retrievable and able to model forward using various parameters.

Compared to the capabilities of the spirit realm, our technology is like the simple pictures of a child trying to draw a house. We are not in the same league, we are not even at a level to begin to comprehend the power, force, and technology behind the veil. This is one of the reasons Jesus told us to be humble, because we have lots to be humble about.

**Dreams are Sent to Assist Us**

Very few people on our planet have had near death experiences. But everyone has dreams. Dreams are our release into the real world – the spirit world. It is our lifeline, so we will not be drowned under the pressure of physical life. In our sleep we can ask for guidance, receive knowledge, and even work on important tasks. This is for those who look to the light before they rest at night. While others travel to the Lower Zones and interact with corrupt influences who do nothing to help them ascend. It is all up to each individual.

The spirit Astriel, in a conversation with the Reverend G. Vale Owen discussed how the spirit world helps people when they ask for guidance for a pressing problem. We have all had days where there is something we just cannot figure out. A homework assignment from school, a complex algorithm to be designed and coded for work, or a presentation to kick off a new project are just a few samples of what could occupy our minds just before retiring for the night.

Many ask for guidance from above in solving their problems, others focus on the conundrum at hand so diligently that the energy of their thoughts reach the spirit plane in a form of requesting assistance. Astriel reminds the good reverend that God gave people minds to use, not just to receive instructions. That part of our trials on earth is to learn to solve difficulties on our own. After all, if the teacher gave everyone the answers to the test, why have the test?

But, like a good teacher, inquiring minds are not entirely left to their own devices. After a student has demonstrated their diligence the teacher will offer advice on how to solve the problem, hints to the path to pursue are supplied to the eager pupil. Astriel recounts how he helped a person to further their knowledge.

“I remember that once I was impressing a man who was investigating the laws of psychology in the matter of visions and dreams. He wanted to find out what was the cause of certain dreams being prophetic – the connection between the dream itself and the incident which it foreshadowed. He applied to me, and I told him that he must continue his investigations and use his own mind, and, if it were well, he would be given to understand.” [\[33\]](#)

Therefore, if one demonstrates dedication and hard work toward a goal, you will be assisted. First the spirit realm must be convinced that a person deserves help. Once that has been established a whole world of information is opened.

Astriel, in his communications to G. Vale Owen, documented in the book *Life Beyond the Veil*, published in the 1920's reveals to us one small facet on how the spirit realm guides and cares for us during our trials here on earth. One aspect of the invisible care we receive is what happens when we dream and how they are structured to help us.

### **Dreams are an Escape from Our Physical Body into the Spirit Realm**

In the book *Spiritist Review - Journal of Psychological Studies of 1858*, published in 2015, by the United States Spiritist Council, there is a dissertation from an unknown spirit about sleep. It supplies a complete survey of what sleep means to souls at different levels and why our dormant state is vital for us:

"Poor human beings! How little you know about the most ordinary phenomena that exist in your life! You think highly of yourselves; you think that you have a vast knowledge and remain speechless before these simple questions framed by all children: "What do we do when we are asleep? What is the meaning of dreams?" I don't have the pretension of making you understand what I want to explain, since there are things that your spirit cannot submit to, because one can only admit what one can comprehend.

Sleep entirely frees the soul from the body. When we are asleep we are momentarily in the same state that we shall definitely be after death. The spirits that have quickly detached from matter, on the occasion of their death, had intelligent dreams; those, when sleeping, meet again with the society of other beings that are superior to them; that travel, talk to them and are enlightened by them. They even work on tasks that they find finalized when they die. This, once more, must teach us that we should not fear death, as we die every day as once stated by a Saint.

All this was said with respect to the superior spirits. The large majority of people, however, who may remain in that perturbation for long hours, in that uncertainty that you were told about, those individuals go

to worlds that are inferior to Earth, attracted by old affections, or to look for pleasures that are even of a lower level than those found here. They will then learn doctrines that are even more vile, ignoble and harmful than those that they profess among you. What establishes the sympathy on Earth is nothing else but the fact that we feel attracted by the heart, as we wake up, to those with whom we have spent eight or nine hours of pleasure or happiness. What also establishes the irresistible antipathy is that, deep there in the heart, we know that those creatures have a different conscience, with respect to us; hence we know them not having ever setting our eyes on them. It is this that also explains the indifference, since we don't seek to make friends when we know that we have others that love us and wish us well. In one word, the sleep influences your lives more than you think.

Through sleep, the incarnated spirits are always in contact with the spiritual world, allowing then that the superior spirits, without much repulse, do agree to come to incarnate in your environment. God wanted that during the contact with vices they could reinforce their virtues in the source of goodness, so as not to fail, as they come to instruct others. Sleep is the door that God opened to them to meet their friends from heaven; it is the break after the work, waiting for the great liberation, the final liberation that should reintegrate them back to their real world.

A dream is the memory of what your spirit saw during the sleep. Notice, however, that you do not always dream since you do not always remember some of what you have seen or everything that you have seen. It is not your soul in its full detachment; often it is nothing more than the memory of the perturbation that follows our departure or arrival, added to the memory of what you have done or what worries you during the waking state. Without that, how can we explain those absurd dreams, of the scholars as well as of the simplest person? The evil spirits also use the dream to torment the weak and pusillanimous souls.

As a matter of fact you will soon see the development of a new kind of dream. It is as old as the one you know but ignored by you. It is the dream of Joan of Arc, of Jacob, of the Jewish prophets and of some Indian fore-tellers. Such a dream represents the memory of the soul,

entirely separated from the body; the memory of that second life that I was telling you about some time ago.

For the dreams that you retain the memory try to distinguish well between those two kinds, as without it you shall fall into contradictions and cause dismal mistakes to your faith." <sup>[34]</sup>

At the end of the spirit's communication, we are being told that some dreams can hold valuable information for us. It is our responsibility to separate the important and relevant dream from the vast majority of nonsense dreams we all have.

Astriel in his conversations with G. Vale Owen helps guide us to discern between the important and the fluff we encounter during our dream state.

### **How a Dream Helped**

Astriel tells G. Vale Owen exactly how he guided the supplicant who wanted to know more about prophetic dreams:

“That night I met him when he fell asleep and conducted him to one of our observatories where we experiment with the object of portraying, in visible form, the events hovering about the present moment; that is, events which have happened shortly before, and those which will happen shortly in the future. We were not able to go far back or far ahead at that particular establishment. That is done by those in the higher spheres.” <sup>[35]</sup>

For those who absolutely reject determinism, like I did, the realization that our future is known rips out the foundation of your beliefs. This means that your life on earth is set, not in stone, only in the trials you shall encounter. You have free will to choose your options and attitude during those lessons presented to you.

Spiritism also answers the question of the ability to see forward. Allan Kardec, who wrote *The Spirits Book*, in the 1850s provides the analogy of a high spirit standing on top of a mountain. There is a trail in the canyons below. The spirit can see a person walking along the path. The advanced spirit is able to detect where the person was and where they are going. Whereas, the person below, he or she only sees the immediate road ahead and can look to the rear to see what has already happened.

We are that person on the rough trail and the spirit world, made up on many levels of ascension, can, determined by the stage of purity, accurately foretell the road ahead. The person who is dreaming will get to see a bit of the road ahead, which was covered in mystery before:

“We set the instruments in order and cast upon a screen a picture of the neighborhood in which he lived, and told him to watch intently. One particular item was the entry into the town of some great personage with a large retinue. When the display was over he thanked us and we conducted him back to his earth body again.” <sup>[36]</sup>

Hence, Astriel arranged for the inquiring gentleman a demonstration of a prophetic dream. Astriel gave him the gift of seeing ahead so he could determine for himself what the dream meant.

“He awoke in the morning with a feeling that he had been in the company of certain men who had been experimenting in some branch of science, but could not recall what it had been about. But as he was going about his work that morning the face of the man he had seen in the procession came to his mind vividly, and he then remembered several scraps of his dream experience.

On opening a newspaper a few days afterwards he saw an intimation that a visit was projected to the town and district of this same personage. The he began to reason things out for himself.

He did not remember the observatory, nor the screen pictures we had shown him, as such. But he did remember the face and the retinue. So he reasoned in this way: when our bodies sleep we ourselves, at least sometimes, go into the sphere of four dimensions. That fourth dimension is such as enables those who dwell there to see into the future. But coming back to this realm of three dimensions, we are not able to carry over with us all we have experienced when we ourselves have been in the realm of four. Yet we do manage to hold such items as are natural to this lower realm, such as the face of an earth dweller and a retinue in procession.” <sup>[37]</sup>

Astriel explains the relationship between the dream and the reality of the experience:

“The connection, then, between such a dream as foreseen and the events themselves is the relation of a state of four dimensions to a state of three. And the former, being of greater capacity than the latter, covers at any moment a wider range of view, as to time and sequence of events, than the latter can do.” [\[38\]](#)

We who live in a three-dimensional world, where we can place and view objects given width, height, and depth. Time is held constant. Our eyes can only view in two dimensions, but our brain enables us to infer the third coordinate.

Now suppose you are a creature of four dimensions, you detect width, height, depth, and time. You see the object not in a snapshot but in all phases of its existence.

Think of us living our lives in a 3D movie. The movie has a beginning and an end, the plot spans hours. Although we, as actors in the film, notice only the part we are currently playing. Each scene is real life to us. But a high spirit standing outside our range of sight, sees the build up to the current scene and result of the actions we take in our present time. We, as the actors caught in the digital representation of the film, have no concept of the audience who hovers around us, watching our lives unfold.

What would happen if you took the actor out of the movie and placed her or him in the audience? They would have a difficult time trying to understand what precisely they are seeing and could only interpret it through their own point of view.

Hence, our dreams are invariably muddled. Our brains are able to cipher the simpler concepts and we, for the most part, misinterpret the fourth dimensional aspects of our dreaming experience.

Given the limitations of our physical bodies, the man who wished to understand prophetic dreams was able to unlock a key concept about dreams and the spirit realm. Astriel summarizes his achievement thusly:

“Now, by such use of his own mental faculties he had arrived at as great an advance in knowledge as I could have given him direct; and by so doing he had also advanced in mental training and power. For although his conclusion was not such as would pass muster here without rectification in several points, yet was roundly and broadly

correct, and serviceable for all practical purposes intellectually. I could not have infused into him more than he had found out for himself.” <sup>[39]</sup>

We are part of the spirit realm, our immortal souls live the vast majority of the time in a world with at least four dimensions, maybe more the higher one travels. Each time we incarnate, we temporarily lose our ability to see past and future and we must live in the present. But we are not left without any tools, we have our conscience and instincts, and we can journey back to the other side to receive assistance.

In our dream state, in the spirit world, it is often more important to evaluate your feelings. If you awake refreshed and happy then you most probably had a trip in the higher levels. On the other hand, if you felt fear or apprehension, you may have resided in the Lower Zone and conversed with immature spirits.

### **Another Example of Dreams Helping a Person**

Often the spirit realm does not just send you one dream to guide you, they may send many and to your family members too.

I was struck by the amount of support the spirit world gave a woman I corresponded with who had experienced the tragic loss of her baby boy. She was very distraught and could not understand why her precious son was taken from her.

She found my Spiritist blog and was looking for answers. She could not reconcile the loss of her infant son with her beliefs. We texted back and forth. I learned that her son had died at an exceedingly early age and that she had two other children. As we were discussing Spiritism, I suddenly had the feeling to ask her if her son had any serious birth defects.

I asked that question, because in many instances in Spiritist literature, souls who have had traumatic previous lives, meaning a death by suicide or other causes require special help to recover. A spirit can damage their perispirit (that which connects their spirit to their physical body) so severely that they require a short rebirth to correct it. A limited stay in a physical body will allow them to recover and then incarnate again in a healthy manner. As was discussed previously.



She was taken back by my question and asked me why did I ask it. I told her about the need to repair a perispirit. She told me that her son had been born with a heart defect, but it was undetected at first. When they found out about it, he had an operation. He seemed to be recovering, but he died suddenly. She felt great regret that she did not find the flaw sooner.

I told her, it was my belief that her little soul most probably required an abbreviated stay and then he may come back to her later. Since, I had read about this occurring before in various Spiritist literature.

When she heard this, she told me of a dream she had. She was on a beach and she met a teenage boy, about seventeen years old. She knew it was her lost son. She felt that it was a vision to let her know he was fine and would still have a future. I told her, that she should seriously consider that the dream was arranged by the spirit world to give her hope and to not allow herself to fall into depression.

Then, she told me her father-in-law dreamt that he had talked to her recently passed son. Her father-in-law said the boy talked to him and told him the universe was all about love. The father-in-law asked what they could have done to keep him on earth, and he replied that it was all part of a plan. The boy told him; all would be fine.

I told the woman; this was another sign from the spirit world to give you comfort. That you are incredibly lucky to have such support and care surrounding you. Still, she was uncertain if these dreams meant anything.

Then she told me her mother had a dream in which her son would be reborn to her. I was amazed, I had never heard of such a constellation of dreams all for the purpose to supply love and comfort for a deeply sorrowful mother. Again, I expressed my belief that you have been given a wonderful gift, that you must be a truly kind and loving person to have so much support from the spirit world.

I told her to keep thinking positive and learn to love all around her. She replied that she does love all of her family, and I said, "You need to learn to love all humanity with the same intensity as you loved your little son. For that is the message that the spirit world has sent us again and again. And that is what your son told your father-in-law."

At the end I urged her to remain faithful and that all would be right, that she was part of a plan to help her, her family, and her son.

Reading this one could ask; how could she doubt with so many signs? But of course, in our culture, dreams and feelings are not proof. I perfectly understand her wish to know with certainty. At some time in the future of our planet, we shall know with absolute proof that the spirit world is real.

We have been granted the gift of leaving our bodies during sleep. It is up to everyone to determine for his or herself what their dreams mean to them and how closely should they follow the perceived lessons resulting from a vivid dream experience.

In summary, dreams are but one more method whereby we are constantly supported by our mother ship – the spirit realm. Dreams can be gifts of love, from lost family, warnings, flights of investigation into serious study, lectures on spiritual matters, and messages of support. While we are destined to take our required classes, in the subjects of what we have failed in before, we are not alone, we are not uncared for in this physical world.

### **Our Progress is Tracked**

The spirit world has invested much effort into us. They monitor and track our progress. The heavens surrounding the Earth, commanded by Christ, has the central goal of shepherding us to become mature spirits, who are capable of being productive members of spirit society. To that aim we are never forgotten, whether on Earth, heaven, the lower zone, or in the dark abyss. There are complete files on each of us.

As an example, the spirit Camilo Branco, who committed suicide in the late 19<sup>th</sup> century. He was rescued by the Servants of Mary, an organization under the leadership of Mary, mother of Jesus. This wing of the group was dedicated to helping suicides. Camilo was brought to a large campus (Mary of Nazareth Hospital), that included a hospital, an advanced learning center, and facilities to assist suicides, plan for their lives and educate them for a greater chance of success in their next life. It was the size of a large college town.

Camilo was kept in the hospital for several years, recuperating from his attempt to destroy his physical body (and thusly damaging his perispiritual body). Physicians helped him and his group learn about themselves, their

mistakes, and about the possibilities for them in their next life. They were given individual help, classes, field trips to Earth, tours of the facilities so they could see all types of suicides and their various conditions.

After his stay at the hospital was deemed completed, he transferred to the city college neighborhood and started learning about himself and the spirit world. I wrote about the classes he took in Chapter 6, in the “Education of Spirits Section”.

Camilo was also assisted in planning his next life, his body and his environment, the major events of his life, in other words his destiny. The help would not stop there, during his time on Earth, he would be given constant guidance and assistance from his spirit mentors in the Mary of Nazareth Hospital.

These tireless and selfless workers had his complete file. They would monitor his progress in the physical plane. If he required assistance, they would do what they could (without effecting his free will) to get him back on the correct path.

At night while he sleeps, he would travel in spirit to the hospital and be given directions and assistance to help him through his problems and trials. Finally, when he dies, he will be brought back to the Mary of Nazareth Hospital, for a full debrief. After the past life analysis is completed, he will take part in planning his next life with the same group of caring mentors he started out with. In this manner, over the course of multiple lives he will be guided back to the path of ascension and be able to repair the damage he committed to his perispirit.

There are other examples; In the book, *Sex and Destiny*, by the spirit Andre Luiz, psychographed by Francisco C. Xavier, there is an institute, Almas Irmas, “Fraternal Souls” in English, which assists spirits which have spent time in their own purgatory. Almas Irmas specializes helping spirits with criminal and obsessive history concerning their sexual behavior. At any one time, the institute will have between five and six thousand souls in residence.

Just to be clear, the Spirit world is not a prude, they advocate equality for all humans, whether heterosexual, bisexual, homosexual, or transgender. What you must not do, is hurt people with your sexual behavior. The

interesting point to consider; I have read about this constant stance from the 1850's, when *The Spirits Book* was published to 1963, when *Sex and Destiny* was published. Well before our present-day mode of thinking.

Therefore, the spirits attending the institute, must have performed deeds they were extremely ashamed of and diligently desired to change their conduct. Like the Mary of Nazareth Hospital, the Almas Irmas organization, not only takes in spirits to heal them and help them recognize their problems, but they also watch over and track them while in their planned physical life on earth.

In the book there is a report on their overall success rates in their first life after they were rehabilitated in the spirit realm (in %'s).

- 18% – Successfully conquered their tendencies.
- 22% – Grew spiritually but did not completely change their behavior.
- 26% – Barely grew spiritually or changed their behavior.
- 34% – Actually grew worse and incurred more spiritual debts, which must be repaid.

An illustration of the difficulty of coping with physical life and modifying your underlying instincts, even after years of training in the spirit world.

Hence, no stone is unturned, no chance of assistance is missed for those who truly request it. Once a spirit determines they are ready to follow the path to the light, the spirit world, always a respecter of free will, marshals their forces to provide the means to a successful life on our planet, so they can acquire spiritual maturity and transform their character for the better.

These few examples of extensive encouragement for spirits who have had difficult physical lives should serve as an illustration of the abundant support we are given. The love that pours forth for each and every one of us from Christ down to his army of mercy fully displays the love that is always available to us. We may only ask, in full sincerity, for assistance.

The entire organization is immense and is dedicated to move us along the path to perfection. Once a person realizes the complete coverage of our

lives that is routine by the workers of the light for our benefit, a breeze of calm should flow over us in whatever situation we find ourselves in. Essentially, we are immortal, we are young immature spirits who are watched very carefully and provided a vast unseen and unwavering hand of support, to encourage us on our spiritual journey.

As a corollary to the recognition of the massive number of organizations, workers, and effort spent on our behalf, we must also realize that we are complex. We are not presented with a lecture or a set of facts and then become decent and caring individuals. Our start as primitive instinct driven personalities, lays the base for uniqueness, as well as creates a foundation of selfishness and pride that takes a mountain of effort to destroy and rebuild. But through all of this, while our free will is respected, we are allowed to learn and grow at our own speed. One life at a time.

### **Learning Through Each Life**

When one life ends the planning for the next begins. The process is unalterable. While each spirit retains the right (once you are in heaven) to not reincarnate, all eventually will, because the rewards of spiritual ascendance shall lure them to self-improvement.

An example of the slow march to betterment is the spirit Emmanuel. He dictated many books to the wonderful late Brazilian medium Francisco (Chico) Xavier. He was also Chico's spirit guide and mentor. Emmanuel introduces his personal history in the book *Two Thousand Years Ago* , psychographed by Chico from Emmanuel. He appears, during the time of Christ, as a Roman Senator. He has an encounter with Christ in which he is requested to become a follower. He rejects the offer and is told; he will have another chance in two thousand years!

Emmanuel's next book *Fifty Years After* , presents Emmanuel, not as a proud Roman Senator, but as a humble slave, who eventually dies in the circus, as the Romans were persecuting the Christians. From that springboard, Emmanuel became a priest in several subsequent lives and was instrumental in the founding of Sao Paulo in the sixteenth century, as the Jesuit priest Manuel da Nobrega. As Manuel he fought for the safety and good treatment of the native population.

His last life, before he became the spirit mentor to Chico was as Father Amaro, who died early in the twentieth century. His life was short. The purpose of his stay on Earth was to learn modern Portuguese, so he could assist Chico Xavier and dictate his books in the current style.

Hence, he rejected Jesus in one life, more than two thousand years ago, and then he gradually transformed from a prideful Roman Senator and pillar of the noble establishment of the great Empire to subsequent lives of poverty and service. He was consistently one of the kind-hearted and caring and truly humble Catholic priests.

Through the extensive planning of his incarnations, he was able to transform himself. He was able to be at peace with what he had, who he was, and the limitations allocated to him. All the while, attempting to be at service to those that needed him.

This long trek of life after life, from strongman to servant, has now made him ready for his next contribution to humanity. He was born in Brazil in the year 2000. He is destined to be of great help to the people and society of Brazil. His spirit mentor will be Chico Xavier.

From the proud Roman Senator to the mentor of Chico, Emmanuel lived through seven lives, that were recorded in Spiritist literature. Hence, around every two hundred years, he came to our planet and lived through a series of pre-planned events, that would shape him for the tasks ahead.

Before his encounter with Christ, he was associated with the rulers and generals of Rome. Hence, at some point in time two thousand years ago and beyond, he had grown to be an intelligent and competent ruler. Those lacking in ruthless efficiency did not rise in the Roman Republic or Empire. He had grown his ability to think rationally and calculate solutions to satisfy his superiors. He had achieved an intellectual plateau. But his moral standing was lacking.

He had not acquired wisdom, which is the marriage of knowledge and love, nor charity, nor fraternity to his fellowmen outside of his family circle. Each of the seven lives served to rip out his old beliefs and replace them with new enlightened ones. Beliefs that did not make him less clever or useful, only to soften his harshness and open beneficial methods for achieving his and his managers desires.

Analyzing Emmanuel proves that one life is not enough. In one life we may learn little or nothing. In one life we may shed no primitive emotions, or at best modify them a little. The battle to be patient, kind, understanding, charitable, and honorable is not just one campaign, but many.

Hence, as we inspect ourselves, do not expect to find perfection. If you do, then you are deceiving yourself. Perfect spirits are not on this planet, except on an extraordinary mission. Instead, expect to find defects. Look at those defects with stark reality and decide how you will correct them.

After all, you are not alone, billions of us are in this fight together and we are all striving to improve. There are plans for each one of us. Some like Emmanuel, others completely different. It depends upon what stimuli is required for a person to practice deep introspection and change their character.

As an example of a different type of approach, on a less grand scale, there were two women introduced in the book *Fifty Years After*, they were mistress and servant. Together they conspired to destroy a marriage of a loving man and wife, because the mistress wanted him for herself. They ruined the marriage and their daughter's life.

Fast forward about one thousand nine hundred years. The mistress and servant were reincarnated as the sisters of the man. The spirit world set this up so they could learn the aspect of brotherly love instead of blind passion. The brother ended up marrying his wife from the past once again.

The two sisters were kind and generous to the poor, although the mistress of the story, never did like any of her brother's girlfriends, thinking that none of them were good enough for her brother. Hence, conflicts are solved, in grand and small ways. Nothing goes unnoticed, nothing goes on too long without being rectified.

Therefore, the dramas one has with people should be carefully examined. If the conflict is not agreeably resolved in the present life, it may spill over to the next. Every small and large battle you have with others are never forgotten in the spirit annals, until they are amicably settled. This is why Jesus said to forgive seventy times seventy. He is attempting to warn you that holding on to your anger serves no purpose. In fact, it is harmful not only to your present but to your future lives.

## Prayers are Processed and Answered

There is one other major conduit of assistance that is always opened to us. That is prayer. At any time, by anyone, prayers will be recognized by the spirit world and they will see what should be done with them. The power of prayer cannot be overstated. A genuine and sincere request is met with real urgency.

But this must be kept in mind; our point of view is not the spirit realm's point of view. What we think of destructive and harmful may be beneficial. What we think we need in this life, may be fulfilled in the next life. What we think a person requires in their life, may be the opposite of what they really need. Our view is miniscule, the spirit world's view is grand. What is in common, is that a person's best interest is first and foremost.

The importance of prayer for ourselves and how the spirit world reacts to our devotions is discussed in the book, *Life Beyond the Veil*, in *The Lowlands of Heaven* section. It was a communication to the Rev G. Vale Owen from Astriel in the spirit world that touches upon the power of prayer and meditation. Astriel places our limited point of view in context and tells us to recognize the arc of lives we all live:

“Prayer is not merely the asking for something you wish to attain. It is much more than that, and, because it is so, it should receive more careful consideration than it has yet received. What you have to do in order to make a prayer a power is to cast aside the temporal and fix your mind and spirit on the eternal. When you do that you find that many items you would have included in your prayer drop out from the very incongruity of their presence, and the greater and wider issues become to you the focus of your creative powers. For prayer is really creative, as the exercise of the will, as seen in our Lord's miracles, such as the feeding of the five thousand. And when prayer is offered with this conviction, then the object is created, and the prayer is answered – that is, the objective answers to the subjective in such a way that an actual creation has taken place.” [\[40\]](#)

Astriel introduces several concepts in the above that are not normally associated with prayer. First, is the aspect of thinking about the eternal, since we are here on earth to learn to be more loving and spiritual, praying for superfluous material possessions will get all of the attention it deserves!



Which is to say, very little. On the other hand, desiring to be given strength to successfully end a trial with newfound knowledge, is an imperishable attribute we would take with us for life after life.

Praying for enlightenment, such as a solution to a problem, or for the benefit of others will always receive due consideration. This type of request which illustrates a desire for spiritual or intellectual self-advancement is a sign to the spirit world that one is serious about their assignment on earth.

The second concept is that our thoughts are translated into action. What we pray for, if it is worthy of an answer, is transformed into physical reality. Praying for help in finding shelter for your family, so they may strive through their own trials without the worry of homelessness, could, for instance, cause a person to decide to rent out their house to the requesting family at a lower rate or with a smaller deposit or no last month's rent. All actions brought about by the manipulations of the spirit world on behalf of the person requesting Divine assistance.

My example is not merely an intellectual exercise. I have known people in dire straits, people who have selflessly helped others, receive free housing, which comes out of the blue. A woman, who was recovering from the aftermath of a near death experience, was not able to work, yet she still insisted on providing care for others, was given the opportunity to stay rent-free in a house. All she had to do was to take care of a small park. These are not coincidences but planned assistance from the Spirit Realm.

Hence, our pleas are never ignored. But they may be judged to be at odds with what we require at a particular time in our lives. With this understanding, do not hesitate to use prayer and make it a daily occurrence in your life. The more you exercise that method of communication, the more connected you shall be to the spirit realm and you will detect, over time, a greater occurrence of synchronicities that seemingly supply help out of the blue.

### **How Does the Spirit World Analyze Our Prayers**

When we think of praying, we think of God or Jesus listening in to our thoughts or spoken voice. Then they decide to either help us or not. The reality is more interesting and logical given the knowledge presented to you in this book. In the communication from the spirit Astriel to the Rev. G.

Vale Owen, we are allowed to peek behind the curtains to discern the process by which our prayers are analyzed.

“For you must know that there are appointed guardians of prayer here whose duty it is to analyze and sift prayers offered by those on earth, and separate them into divisions and departments, and pass them on to be examined by others, and dealt with according to their merit and power.” <sup>[41]</sup>

The process seems too earth-like, too much like how it would be done in a large corporation. This is because, as much as we would wish it to be otherwise, earth is a poor reflection of heaven. How people organize themselves, how work is done and other mundane tasks we bring our inclinations from our sojourn during our spirit life to our incarnated lifespan. Hence, in heaven, as on earth, there are vast organizations and levels of management and separation of duties. The glaring difference is that all work together without rancor or politics. An atmosphere of love pervades.

The vital point to be taken is the amount of care parceled out to every one of us. The Spirituality is listening and responding. We just lack the sensitivity to recognize the effect it has on our life. It can be done, by evaluating your life, the signals and synchronicities that have shaped your present, you can begin to reveal the marvelous ways in which you have been guided.

There are some prayers which must be referred to even higher authorities. Prayers which are beyond the capability of certain levels of heaven to determine the best course of action. Astriel tells us what is done with desires which are undecipherable.

“These we pass on to those of higher grade, to be dealt with in their greater wisdom. And do not think that these latter are always found among the prayers of the wise. They are frequently found in the prayers of children, whose petitions and sighs are as carefully considered here as those of nations.” <sup>[42]</sup>

Hence, the requests of children struggling in dysfunctional families or other dire circumstances are carefully reviewed. The love of children is equal or even more profound in the spirit realm than it is on earth.

Finally, to dispel any doubt as to how prayers are analyzed and then acted upon, we are given this example:

“Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God.’ You will remember these words spoken by the Angel to Cornelius. They are often passed over without being understood as the literal description of those prayers and alms as they appeared to that Angel, and were passed on, probably by himself and his fellow workers, into the higher realms. It is as if he had said, ‘Your prayers and alms came before my own committee, and were duly considered on their merits. We passed them as worthy, and have received notification from those Officers above us that they are exceptional merit, and require a special treatment. Therefore I have been commissioned to come to you.’ We are trying to put the case as emphatically as we can in your language of official business in order to help you to understand as much as you may be able of the conditions here obtaining.” <sup>[43]</sup>

How often do we hear that communication from the spirit world is wrapped in a parable, or the meaning is difficult to comprehend? Here is an example of a straightforward message, plain as day, as to how prayers operate.

In essence, when you pray, be worthy of what you ask for. Demonstrate previous spiritual growth or the desire for it. Ask only for what helps you or others to improve while on trial on earth or at least to successfully complete a trial.

Astriel tells us that prayers prove that Angels shed tears. They see and hear what is requested and their hearts cry out in pity and love. He asks us to remember that love and compassion are real objects in the spirit world. Just as is hate and greed are in the Lower Zone. We are told they take on a type of solid form, a recognizable pattern which are physical measurements of our progress and status on earth.

### **Our Guardian Angel**

All areas covered in the chapter above concern themselves with the process and procedures to fashion our education and to assist us in our classes. There remains one more pillar of light that is constantly with us – our guardian angel.

In the book, *The Spiritist Review, Journal of Psychological Studies of 1859*, published in 2015 by the US Spiritist Council, there is a communication regarding guardian angels from spirits who signed themselves St. Augustine and St. Louis.

In the Chapter titled, "The Guardian Angels" on page 35, the message is revealed:

"There is a doctrine that should convert the most incredulous for its enchantment and kindness. This is related to the subject concerning guardian angels. Just think about the fact that you have near you beings who are your superiors, who are there to counsel you, to sustain you, to help you to escalate the difficult mountain of righteousness; who are more certain and dedicated friends than the most intimate relationships that you can establish on Earth; isn't that a consoling idea? Those beings are following God's orders. It was God who placed them by your side. They are there out of love for God, thus accomplishing a beautiful and tough mission. Yes, they will be with you wherever you go. The dungeons, the hospitals, the places of mockery, the solitude, nothing separates you from those friends that you don't see but whose kind impulse your soul feels, hearing their wise advices.

Had you known this reality better, how many times would that help you at moments of crises! How many times would that save you from the hands of bad spirits! However, on the great day this angel of goodness may tell you: 'Haven't I told you? And you did not do it. Haven't I shown you the abyss? And you fell into that. Haven't I made you hear the voice of truth in your conscience? Nevertheless, you followed the advices of lie.' Ah! Interrogate your guardian angels; establish with them this fond intimacy that reigns among the best of friends. Think not of hiding anything from them since theirs is God's eyes and you cannot deceive them. Think of the future and endeavor to advance in this life. Thus your trials will be shorter and your existences happier. Go people, courage! Cast away your prejudices and hidden thoughts, once for all. Take the new path that opens up before you. March on; march on, since you have guides that you must follow. The target cannot frustrate you for the target is God Himself.

To those who think it is impossible for elevated spirits to attach themselves to such a laborious and constant task, we say that we influence your souls even by being millions of miles away from you. To us, space is nothing and even living in another world, our spirits keep the bonds with yours. We enjoy faculties that you cannot understand but be assured that God has not imposed on us a burden beyond our strength and that God did not abandon you without friends and support on Earth. Each guardian angel has his own protégé who it watches like a father over the son. It is happy when sees the child following the good path and suffers when its advices are neglected.

Don't be afraid of bothering us with your questions. On the contrary, be always in touch with us, since you will then be stronger and happier. What makes all people mediums are these communications between each person with their familiar spirit - mediums who are ignored today but who will manifest later, spreading like a boundless ocean to keep incredulity and ignorance away. You don't know the work that you accomplish by doing so. It is the works of Christ which God imposes on you. Why would God have given you intelligence and Science but to share with your brothers and sisters and make them advance in the path of the eternal venture and happiness?" [\[44\]](#)

St. Louis and St. Augustine

I hope this helps you feel comforted and loved. When you are at your loneliest or at the very bottom in the middle of a hard trial, think of your guardian angel and pray for strength and guidance. Demonstrate your sense of purpose and your willingness to learn and I guarantee you, events will start breaking your way.

### **The Physical Journey**

The spirit world never abandons us, they are never out of touch. We are their objects of care more then we can imagine. We believe we are solitary and lonely individuals. We imagine we rarely find love or a deep connection with a friend. In reality, our friends and colleagues are around us – watching, praying for us, and involved in our journey on this campus called Earth.

The sojourn is long and arduous to us, who believe one life is all we have. We consider ourselves unlucky, unloved, and uncared for. On the contrary, we are blessed to be able to appear in a physical form to work through our required lessons. We are loved intensely by the spirit realm and our leader Jesus. And we are cared for in many ways by the army of angels around us.

We have our implanted conscience and instincts; we have our own intelligence to successfully traverse the maze before us. We have our nightly wanderings in the spirit realm to refresh us and supply the motivation and guidance to surmount the obstacles in front of us. We have our prayers, our open line to the higher powers who are always vigilant on our behalf. And lastly, the most important, we have our guardian angel. Who never rests while we are in the physical domain.

The immensity of assistance should amaze you. Think how unaware we have all been to the available services at our fingertips. Even when the improbable happens and we put it down to chance, it is not luck, it is the spirit realm, in their infinite knowledge, that is behind those miraculous happenstances that have affected all of our lives.

Learn to recognize the invisible guiding hand of the spirit realm. Once you begin to detect the subtle signs and signals you shall be able to understand the direction you should choose. When paths are blocked and others suddenly open before you, it is a signpost that you should ponder the path you originally chose and measure the new opportunities with your conscience and determine which is best for your long-term spiritual health.

Pray and meditate, commune with your guardian angel, then your path will be ever lighted and your victory in this life shall be assured.





## **Chapter 8 – What Do We Do Now**

We have reviewed the Physical Universe, which is a subset of the Spirit Universe. We have discussed the power and majesty of Christ. In His spiritual and executive forms. We have explored the unknowable God (at least to us in our present stage of maturity). We have reviewed the composition of spirits at different levels. We have illustrated the journey of a spirit and have surveyed the path to spiritual ascension. Lastly, the numerous processes that govern our trials and services available to us have been discussed.

There is one vital part missing - ourselves.

As far as my poor and inadequate knowledge via many spiritual sources can provide, I have tried to explain the entire ecosystem surrounding and penetrating us. All to one purpose, to provide an understanding of why the world is as it is and for each individual to determine for his or herself how to react.

The unvarnished fact that we are totally interconnected and permeated with a complex logical and physically appearing system, with programmed rules, in which some are unalterable, and others are dynamic, can be met in many ways.

The first reaction, we have all chosen at one point in time or another is indifference. We opt out. We refuse to recognize a superior organization. We attempt, like the ostrich, to simply wish it gone. As if by ignoring it, the spirit realm loses all power over us. This results in life after life of the same trials and tribulations. We may make a little progress, but the centuries go by slowly as we learn the most basic of lessons.

The second is rebellion. The idea of an omnipotent power judging us is caustic to our self-importance. We seek out other rebellious forces – spirits who are dedicated to turning others away from the light and to perpetuate the stage of atonement, so these spirits can inhabit the lawless Lower Zone and the Dark Abyss, so their wicked pleasures may continue. This approach can be effective for thousands of years, until our planet does ascend, and the retrogressed spirits are shuttled to other even more primitive planets. Where the battle begins anew.



Eventually, all spirits come to the conclusion that the advice to be humble and submit to reality is the best path forward. While it may sound as if a person voluntarily put a yoke around their necks and bowed down as if they were slaves, the opposite is true.

The path forward is not one of submission, but of omnipotent power. Creation – art, music, intellectual exploration, planetary systems, races, cultures, stars, and galaxies – await to be guided and commanded. But to get there does require an acknowledgement of our own defects and lack of perfection.

Only by the pursuit of perfection – intellectually and spiritually, may we climb the mountain to attain the powers of a minor god. And this perfection, is composed of the higher emotions – love, charity, fraternity, and honor. Hence, our realization of our inadequacy, is the first step, so we may cleanse the old foundation of our previous existences and rebuild. We must construct a platform where our minds control immense power – power to make or break stars, form planets, birth or destroy entire races.

It all begins within us. The task to rewire emotions, habits, and long-held beliefs is the most difficult of all. It is not a single lifelong journey, but a multiple lifelong slog, through the hardest terrain possible – your mind.

### **The Path**

I have written an entire book, *How to Live – Inner Peace through Spiritism*, about the steps required to reprogram your character and personality. It is based on a twenty-four-verse poem by the spirit Andre Luiz. Each stanza builds upon the other in describing the stage that must be attained to begin the next. In the book I describe what Andre means by that short stanza and how to achieve it.

Here, I will abbreviate the path. But first, below is the poem:

Inner Peace – A poem by Andre Luiz

Keep Always

... trust in God and in yourself

... a serene conscience

... time spent on productive matters

- ... a constructive speech
- ... a prayer allied to work
- ... hope in action
- ... an industrious patience
- ... a dispassionate opinion
- ... the blessing of comprehension
- ... a participation in everyone's progress
- ... a compassionate attitude
- ... truth enlightened by love
- ... oblivion of evils
- ... happiness in your commitments
- ... unconditional forgiveness of offenses
- ... a devotion to study
- ... a gesture of kindness
- ... an encouraging smile
- ... spontaneity to assist others
- ... simplicity of habits
- ... a spirit of renovation
- ... fostering of tolerance
- ... courage to place yourself second to serving
- ... perseverance in goodness

I recognize there are many roads to perfection, and that it will be different for each of us. Nevertheless, a proposed avenue has been revealed by a spirit. It is beneficial to analyze what the spirit world believes to be one possible approach to rewiring our character and personality to ascend in the spirit realm.

Each stanza is a step in changing bad habits and reinforcing good ones, each is attainable, but the effort to conquer each one is dependent upon successful attainment of the previous stanza. Following is a summary of each goal, which will propel you to the higher planes of heaven. I have reprinted this summary section from my book, *How to Live – Inner Peace Through Spiritism* .

### **Trust in God and Yourself**

It all starts from there. Without belief in a higher power and a purpose for life on earth, there is no rhyme or reason to ever improve or think of helping others. We would just be temporary life forms on our planet to attain as much pleasure and material goods that we could and then melt back into the soil when our time is up.

On the other hand, an acknowledgement of a vast spirit universe, which watches over us and guides us, changes everything. With the comfort of God's love we realize that we are valuable members of His family and as such, we understand our own worth. We know that we are not evolutionary happenstances, we are humans on this planet to learn and to improve. Hence, we trust in the importance of our life and ourselves.

### **A Serene Conscience**

With that as a base, the next line is "A Serene Conscience." Once a belief in a grand sequences of universes controlled by a Supreme Intelligence is grounded, one realizes there is a set of rules which guide behavior. These multi-universal laws are written into our conscience. If we listen attentively to our conscience, our life becomes tranquil, even in the face of external storms.

The knowledge that we are following the precepts of love, charity, and fraternity – as well as we are able – dampens down our anxieties. We all understand that the vast majority of stress is self-induced. Our stress is usually the result of doing something that we know is wrong and our bodies react to the disruption of our inner harmony.

Legions of people complain about debilitating diseases, auto-immune disorders, nervousness, aches and pains which have no medical explanation, and bouts of deep depression – all of which have their start in the weakening of the body caused by tension.

Numerous studies have shown that people who are spiritual and believe in a religion or doctrine that guides us to understand that we are on earth under the watchful eyes of superior spirits are healthier than those who have no faith in a higher power.

Hence, the acknowledgement of a moral authority, that certain actions are reprehensible – such as stealing, murder, cruelty, wantonness, dishonesty, and extreme selfishness, to name a few – are tenets placed above human law.

The false theory of relative morality is destructive and only serves to delay the transition of our planet from a place of chaos and hate to our destiny toward a planet of love and support. Climbing the ladder to a plateau where paradise awaits takes human cooperation. Where the village elders encourage the younger to live together in peace and those who refuse to treat their fellow citizens with respect are requested to find other homes.

The earth is in a stage of transition. Humans will self-select, via their free will, if they wish to expend the effort to acquire the characteristics of the Good and participate in the evolution of our planet, or simply ride along and be sent to other less advanced planets, where they will, once again, be given opportunities for personal growth.

### **Time Spent on Production Matters**

A deep and lasting faith and a commitment to adhere to universal laws of decency, frees one to step outside their home into a beautiful garden of opportunities. Pursuits appear as colorful flowers, that as they are picked, never wither, but remain alive and vibrant within us.

Each task that we set ourselves, whether our career, assisting others, providing love and comfort to our family, which is in concert with our faith and conscience is edifying. Each effort dedicated to Good, invests itself in our character and promotes our spiritual ascendancy.

As we accumulate works of light and love, our spirit becomes brighter. When high spirits come to the earth plane, they detect the shine of our aura. They immediately comprehend that we are attempting to scale the great mountain toward spiritual purity and lesser spirits understand that time spent to divert us, is usually wasted.

Spiritism notifies us that we live in a sea of spirits. They are all around us and will continue to be as long as we live on a planet of atonement. When the earth rises and becomes a planet of regeneration, the errant spirits who inhabit the invisible plane around and below us will be moved from earth and sent elsewhere.

Hence, the whispering of counter-productive ideas into our minds will vanish. People born and raised on a globe without constant temptation will be happier and more content with their lives. Free of longing for that one more morsel of self-indulgence.

### **A Constructive Speech**

Nothing motivates others as well as positivism. The signs of self-confidence, compassion, and constructive approaches to problems will naturally radiate from you, when you have demonstrated a personality steeped in promoting love and care for all.

As you become a better person, a more spiritual and kind individual, your verbal communication will be naturally elevated. All of these, faith in yourself and in the wisdom of the spirit realm, following your conscience, activities that are beneficial, and conversation which is free of pessimism and negative thoughts create a powerful feedback mechanism.

Thoughts radiate from your mind, at a constant pace. Your ideas flow around you and throughout the galaxy. At the same time thoughts from others invade your mind and you are subtly affected. As you begin to transmit happy and encouraging ideas, these will bounce off of others and return to you.

A feedback loop of ever increasing goodness will be established. Others will feel better in your presence, which will cause them to think healthy thoughts, thereby sending back uplifting feelings to you.

We have seen the opposite, whereby people in a deep funk attract others like them. Each feeding off negative emotions, thereby sinking them all further into despondency. Escaping from that condition is difficult and painful.

Whereas living in a bright and happy world of emotions allows one to step from small successes to larger ones to victory in life. All the while

serving as a beacon of right living to others to emulate.

### **A Prayer Allied to Work**

Being a force for Good is wonderful, but to perform at peak effectiveness means that choices of direction should be accomplished in concert with our spirit benefactors. The need for interactive communication with our guardian angels cannot be overstated.

Living, growing, and being without spiritual guidance is like being a child without parents. We require, as do children, support, direction, sustenance, and love to continue our struggle to acquire as much valuable experience and wisdom as possible during our short stay in the physical plane.

Unfortunately, the advice and care given to us by our spirit guardians are frequently ignored and missed altogether, as teenagers tend to dismiss the greater knowledge and love from their parents. Whereas, regular family meeting where parents and children exchange ideas freely, prayer and meditation serves to open a channel of communication to the other side.

While you may not be aware of direction, inspiration given by superior angelic beings will guide you if your mind is open to light and love. What was once uncertain will become a purpose and what was filled with anxiety will be replaced with calm and steadfastness.

To paraphrase what the Buddhist say, when we think right, we live right, we act right. And to insure we act right, we measure our inspiration to what our conscience tells us, and if the combination is found to be correct and emotionally pleasing ... we are sure to be on the right track.

### **Hope in Action**

Setting your course according to the direction given by loving spirits and fortified with tools of great power – faith, conscience, purpose, positivity, and communication from above – should provide that any undertaking one begins, starts with a predilection of success.

Remember always – our guardian angels desire and fight for our triumph in any enriching mission. If there was a failure, it was meant to be; it was to provide a needed lesson so subsequent endeavors will be victorious. It is as important to learn from failures as from successes. Only

through analysis of our strengths and weaknesses can we permanently alter our character to the good.

The spirit realm has complex plans for you and your life is not meant to be a smooth ride in a luxury car, instead it is more a trip in your first automobile you purchased in High School. It had frequent break downs and you had to constantly check the oil, but with perseverance you got to where you wanted to be.

My wife and I were at a Spiritist Medium's meeting in Rio de Janeiro in February 2018. In a message we received we were told to not be discouraged when our plans did not proceed as we wished because some of the detours we take are opportunities for personal growth.

Therefore, keep in the forefront of your mind, we are part of an intricate tapestry. There is an overall design, but the path to the end must follow threads which appear and disappear and touch many others. Deep inside the construction of the carpet, we can't see the pattern. It does not matter, the plan exists in full view of the spirits who guide us. And when we return to the spirit realm – we too will see it and recognize the brilliance of the enterprise to make us a better person.

### **An Industrious Patience**

As we re-analyze each line of the poem in order, the building blocks are beginning to reveal their overall structure. In the stanza before, we were asked to commit to hope in action. Now we are cautioned that we should acquire an industrious patience.

It all makes sense. I know because I have lived it. When I started out on the journey of discovering Spiritism, I felt I had seen a treasure and all I needed was to open the lid of the chest and others would also be enthralled.

But, in each message I received from the spirit realm, I was told I would be planting seeds. Which meant that I would not see results. In other words, I had to toil and be patient. The crop would rise at its own time, not the moment I wished, but when it was ready.

To cut through the barrage of calls for purchasing worthless goods with a message of inner peace and spiritual growth is an uphill battle. Most probably it will be a fight that will last decades, if not longer.

Allan Kardec codified Spiritism in the 1850s and it enjoyed a remarkable period of reaching out to European and American audiences. But then, organized religion, seeing the danger of calling for internal personal improvement, as opposed to public demonstrations of piety, by listening to rote prayers and ceremonies – fought back. And did its best to discredit the notion of communication with spirits and the truth of reincarnation.

Spiritism was able to re-emerge. Never dying in Europe, thanks to the efforts of dedicated evangelists such as Leon Denis and others, but more importantly, it found renewed roots in Brazil, in the early 1900s and began to reach a large section of the population after Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier started to publish books he psychographed from various spirits. Where, at the present in Brazil, over five percent of the population are Spiritist. You will find Spiritist centers in most neighborhoods and Spiritist Hospitals in various cities. All dedicated to working with modern methods and the spirit world to help incarnates and discarnates alike.

In summary, we are told that any task that we set our sights upon, may not be easy, or even bear visible fruit, but the work itself is part of the learning experience. As we are doing we are growing. We are plowing the soil and sowing seeds for the future ... our future and those around us. Patience is required, as it is always in any grand endeavor.

### **A Dispassionate Opinion**

High spirits know the truth about us. They understand why we are here and the tribulations we must suffer in order to emerge one day as a productive soul in heaven. We on the planet, have our own truths. Truths not necessarily rooted by facts, because humans in general are as yet unable to comprehend the true meaning of our existence.

Hence, we each have a set of prejudices, conditioned likes and dislikes that we acquire in each lifetime, and some carry over from previous lives. We tend to personalize our feelings toward others. We categorize them into good and bad buckets. Once labeled it is almost impossible for a person to transfer from the bad to the good pile.

Spiritism, in its revelation of the plurality of lives, should destroy this preconception of people according to our own measuring system. Instead,



we need to recognize that there are different levels of maturity of spirits. And that we, who think we are civilized and wonderful, should step back and realize that we too have been primitive – stealing, robbing, lying, taking advantage of our fellow men – the whole gambit of abhorrent behavior. We have been guilty of everything in the past, and only via repeated trials have we emerged the person we are now.

Therefore, when examining a person's life and their deeds, do not measure it against one lifetime, but think of the arc of lives. Where they have been, where they are now, and what lessons could be waiting for them in the future. Only then can one form a dispassionate opinion.

This micro analysis can be used for greater situations. The spirit world has enabled entire civilizations to rise and fall. They have promoted one race over another and then unleashed destructive fury to rebalance the scales. All is in flux because everything is in constant motion. A forward path of learning.

Do not be intellectually or emotionally too attached to a set of abstract notions on earth. Each country, civilization, political party, religion, or whatever human created organization one can think of ... are all going to disappear or be radically transformed as we approach the creation of a planet of regeneration.

### **The Blessing of Comprehension**

Mental preparation, a positive attitude, work, a plan, patience, and an objective analysis are all keystones to growth – personal and professional. Next is the mortar which holds together the foundation for improvement – understanding.

Learning and spitting the information back out is something every successful student acquires. Spiritism starts out like that for many. One reads the Doctrine, watches videos. Dives deeper into the books by Chico Xavier and other mediums. The truth of multiple lives become clear. The predetermination of trials for each of us is recognized.

Intellectually, these processes of the spirit realm and how they guide our existences become logical and part of our thinking. When we examine a person, their circumstances, and their life in general, we can detect the hand of the spirit realm and the effects of previous histories.

But eventually, after much study and meditation, an added dimension occurs. One begins to feel - along with intellectual clarity. No longer is a person analyzed like a rat in a laboratory experiment, but as a beloved spirit – a soul whose defects are caused by ignorance, a lack of spiritual maturity.

It is the start of wisdom ... knowledge, emotion, empathy combined which puts one at a new level of comprehension. It is the seeing of a person through the eyes of the spirit realm. Not as a person to be disregarded or to be forcibly altered and freed of their bad habits, but as a person of potential. An object of love.

A sculpture of beauty trapped inside a slab of marble – this is how we are seen by the spirit realm. Each splinter of rock is removed with the upmost care and in anticipation of the next chisel strike. Extensive planning is required to finally reveal, after millennia, a pure spirit. One that is utmost pristine in thought but still retains their unique personality.

### **A Participation in Everyone's Progress**

With comprehension of the real world around us; not the world of illusion that is pushed onto us by those who wish to profit at every turn. There comes a time when we are able to visualize the stunningly complex intersectionality of each human being.

Every small and large, insignificant and significant encounter each of us has with others is mainly scripted in advance. Hence, we understand that when we are touched by the life of another, we should take interest.

Our interest should be of one that determines the best opportunity for self-growth for the person within our sphere of influence. Not the best method to teach them a lesson, but the optimal scheme to supply that person with tools to use in the future.

Heuristics, the art of problem solving, via a variety of approaches depending upon the circumstances – this is one of the main components we are expected to master during our multiple sojourns on earth. And we should experiment with our fellow humans.

Hence, we should painstakingly review how we are able to assist each person, so they too will be able to analyze their circumstances and self-correct any faults they deem necessary.

I repeat – it is not our job to be judge and jury – the individual will accomplish this over time. It is our task to facilitate the lesson plan imposed on them by the spirit realm.

### **A Compassionate Attitude**

And in the formulation of our approach to others we must place to the forefront – compassion. True consideration is to help without making the receiver suffer – mentally or physically. It is assistance based upon the knowledge that we have all been where the person who we are helping is presently, in one life or another. We have all been primitive spirits, fighting for survival and thoroughly selfish.

Guidance without judgement. This does not mean we can't analyze the faults of the person, or mentally list the wrongful deeds they have committed. Only that we reserve our harsh statements and prescriptions for a time when the person is open to suggestion and even then act more like a coach than a law enforcement officer.

We should strive to never make the person feel inadequate or small. They too are wanderers, set upon earth on a journey of self-improvement and destined to become perfect spirits one day. Hence, instead of forcing a person onto a path, we should point out the benefits of following the better road ahead. Let them make the decision. After all, a wrong choice maybe more beneficial in the long run than choosing the correct answer.

### **Truth Enlightened by Love**

If you have been able to conquer the previous eleven steps and have arrived at a level of wisdom balanced by knowledge, compassion, with a deeply set foundation stone in the certainty of our immortality and the love of the Supreme Being for all souls – then you have reached a mighty plateau.

Truth sounds so easy to decipher. But as long as we are wrapped within our human body and all of its frailties; the illusions we construct to satisfy our ego blinds us to reality. Our self-importance, our false belief in our goodness in all circumstances, our intellect, the righteousness of our desires ... all form a rigid set of armor protecting us from the truth.

Chico Xavier, who was by all accounts a very humble man. A medium who psychographed more than 450 books, yet he lived a very simple life. He slept in a small bed in a small room. Once, he was asked by a man, “Chico, are you humble or are you ashamed?” He replied, “I am ashamed.”

This simple answer exposed everything about what Chico knew about himself and all humans on the planet. To be humble, is to be not proud or haughty, even though you may have reasons to be so. If Chico said he was humble, then it would imply that he is acting with deference because of his philosophy and love of people. Ultimately, it would denote that he was a self-made man, who had vast mediumistic powers and many achievements under his belt but decided to act with kindness toward all.

Instead, he said he was ashamed. Which fully demonstrated that Chico understood he was an immature soul (albeit vastly superior to all of us) in a land of immature souls who are learning to become civilized. Chico knew that saying he was humble would be like a fifth grader saying he or she was humble.

The elementary student has no concept of life outside their house and classroom. They would not understand the truth about life beyond their little universe ... they could not comprehend; they don't have the capacity at their stage of development.

Chico knew this and answered the question with unerring honesty. Although, the difference between the child and us, is that we do have the capacity to comprehend, but the trek is difficult.

Hence, to fully embrace the truth we must step outside of our selves. We must look at ourselves with compassion, yet under a pure white light of veracity. We must strip away all false pretenses and see ourselves for the immature soul we are. That we live in a world of falseness – false goals, false desires, false institutions – all there to hide the naked truth – that we are all imperfect on a journey to become perfect.

And that journey is not accomplished in solitary, but with guidance from a higher power, with absolute rules of conduct – which we all know, nevertheless, we still sometimes steadfastly attempt to ignore the pleas of our conscience.

While under the harsh spotlight we may look like shaking wet puppies – but understand well, within each incarnate spirit there is a secret garden of love, understanding, and compassion waiting to be revealed. All it takes is hard work and study.

### **Oblivion of Evils**

When Andre Luiz wrote “oblivion of evils”, he did not mean to set out to wage war on what each of us considered wicked in this world. It was a call to change our attitude. To expand our field of vision and to not paste labels on temporary stages of growth.

It was a request to consider the entire story in the context of immortal life and growth. Yes, wrongdoers must be cautioned and imprisoned at times. Nevertheless, constant attempts to teach and guide them are part of our responsibility on earth. After all, we are members of the student body and are part of the process of enlightenment for those around us.

Spirits tell us that evil is nothing more than the absence of good. The inability of people to discern the correct act versus the wrongful act. Reincarnation is the mechanism to repair this lack of judgement. Throughout many lives ... we soon learn the repercussions of our thoughtless deeds.

Hence, the more we can facilitate the education of ourselves and the human race, the faster we may move from a world of atonement to a planet of regeneration, where evil and ignorance of civilized behavior is greatly diminished.

### **Happiness in your Commitments**

On our personal journey toward the eradication of evil and ignorance in our lives, we should be joyful. We are on the road to a beautiful castle, high on top of the mountain. The climb is arduous, but the destination is divine. Once we reach the summit, sustenance, rewards, knowledge, friendship, love, and indescribable vistas await.

Each step we take, each trial that we survive and thrive is one more small victory on our path toward the top. Every time we take a lesson to heart or help another see their life through a new prism of forgiveness and advancement, we inch closer to our goal.

Why not be happy, does making your hike with a bad attitude provide any benefit? Of course not, it only lessens the value of the progress and hinders all around you. A dour attitude only creates a veil between you and the world. The selfishness and personal hurt that always accompanies a negative state of emotion only dulls the senses and inhibits discovery.

Therefore, as you work and learn, do so openly and with welcoming arms. The lessons offered to you will be more effective and life changing.

### **Unconditional Forgiveness**

Achieving this state entails ripping apart every preconception, cultural points of view, and societal pressure imaginable. This certainly does not mean one has to promote bad behavior or not let the legal system punish abhorrent acts, only that any rancor one may have had toward people, groups, political parties, and governments be cast off.

To achieve this plateau, one must step outside oneself and see one's body as an actor in a scripted play. Characters will enter from stage right and left. Scenes will progress. Acts will complete. Secondary parts will walk on, provide a clue or continuity for the next act. There will be periods of action and times of dialog.

Ask yourself about any of the actors in the drama. Are the actors evil or mean? Or is the part they are playing evil or mean? In fact, a character may start out a scoundrel, but later emerge as an honest and caring person. All have an arc to their story. All are performing a part. And each role is vital to the entire play. Absence of one role or missing a line, may cause the story to wander off the original plot.

When the performance is completed, when everyone meets at the bar afterwards, enemies in the play are friends, for they knew they each acted according to the script and each tried to give the best performance they could.

This is how we should see ourselves on earth. When someone does something horrible to us – it was meant to be. We should not hate the actor, but think about their performance and what it means to the main character – ourselves. Whatever was done was meant to move the star of the show forward, from one state to the next.

Do not take anything personally, it is all happening to the spirit (the actor) trapped in a physical body. Analyze what is happening to the character and think about how the character could improve and grow. Once the play is done, you will remove the heavy and confining costume and fly free in the spirit universe.

### **A Devotion to Study**

To analyze your actions and responses to the lessons provided you and the deeds of others around you – you need to study.

Every stanza, every word in the previous lines of the poem “Inner Peace”, leads to this juncture. Only by preparation is one ready to begin the task to explore an important topic. And this topic is the most imperative in your life. It is the reason you are on earth.

To understand the messages from high spirits you should put yourself in a state free from ego, negative emotions, and stress. Next you need to rearrange your feelings to acknowledge the presence of superior beings in your life and the part they play. You should emphasize the positive attributes you possess.

Most important of all is to launch the journey with as clean a conscience as one can manage. Let past misdeeds be forgotten, they were but required lessons, completed less than perfect – but now move forward with your conscience as your guide and governor.

Remove all stress, which is accomplished by a clear conscience and complete and unconditional forgiveness for all, and look at your life from the peak of a mountain. Peer down and see yourself on the rocky trail.

Now you are ready to study. Now each word from your guardian angel or high spirits via Spiritist books will resonate with you. You shall find the true meaning of each sentence and how it affects you.

### **A Gesture of Kindness**

The rest of the poem is a guide to how to behave after you have embarked on your personal journey of enlightenment. As you study and learn, you will naturally begin to re-shape your outer personality. This will occur because your inner self shall be altered. The negative vibrations will

be replaced with positive harmony. You will begin to radiate light instead of darkness. Those around you will feel it and respond accordingly.

None of this happens rapidly, it takes years, but it does occur. And as you strive, your spirit mentors are there with you, re-enforcing good behavior, just like a teacher rewards hard working students.

As you act with kindness toward yourself, you begin to show it to others. Being calm, correct, and caring towards everyone around you becomes a habit. It is as if you were transported back into the days of polite society, where men and women were consciously gracious and good manners were always in the forefront.

This is a welcoming state and if you sit back and feel you are in it ... you have achieved a great victory.

### **An Encouraging Smile**

With kindness comes the outward appearance of compassion. With love and compassion offering a pleasant face with a smile becomes the rule, not the exception.

Walk down any street and greet oncoming people with a smile and a “hi” and see what you receive in turn. Mostly I greet those that pass me by with a smile or a friendly nod and I get nothing in return. Or I receive a quick glance. Seldom have I seen a smile.

This is all understandable. People are seemingly forced, by circumstances beyond their control (or so they think – I know I have been there too) to scramble their entire lives. After college, they have debt and must get a job to live and to pay back what they borrowed. Society then moves them along where they must buy the latest fashion or gimmick to keep up with their friends and maintain appearances.

The mountain of obligations overwhelms them, and in response they work harder and longer hours, or an additional job, to cover expenses. Married couples agonize over the cost of a child, and if they had the good graces to have additional children, the burden is heavier. There is nothing but work, eat, sleep, with a few weeks of vacation in between.

Our materialistic society is dedicated to creating a system to keep people buying at all costs. And to consume, means to work. Downtime is



discouraged because that means people are not fueling the system with coin.

All of this causes stress. The time to relax and show kindness or even return a smile never arrives.

One must fight with all their might to remove themselves from a pure materialistic existence and seek a balance. And when time is found to begin the path of inner peace, any lack of possessions become completely irrelevant. High spirits tell us that denying ourselves is like pruning a tree. The more branches are trimmed back, the stronger it grows.

As our roots grab hold of reality, we become anchored to the true life on earth and we are able to live free of frivolous encumbrances. We are free to smile upon everyone and everything and feel the sun shining upon us with its warmth.

### **Spontaneity to Assist Others**

And as we let the sunshine into our hearts and reflect it back on our fellow travelers, we become open to slow down our daily lives and lend a hand. Once, the overall rush of unrelenting propaganda is shut down – for you have now consciously filtered it down to the essentials – one has freedom to think of other things besides how to keep afloat in this world.

Decreasing stress triggers a myriad of benefits. Besides being healthier, you are more alert – ready for unexpected circumstances. This is where building a habit of kindness and smiling leads into dual connections.

When your heart and emotional state is filled with love, and you radiate warm thoughts to those you meet and appear friendly to strangers ... an aura surrounds you. A glow, a haven exists within and outside of your space. This invisible state attracts those who are in need. They feel a safe port – quite often because they are encouraged by their guardian angel – and therefore gravitate toward you.

As they approach, sub-consciously you are notified of a struggling soul and your mind focuses your mental powers at the person within your view. Hence, a linkage is created. Your guardian spirit may have already inspired you as to what the person requires. Since you are at a higher spiritual state, your selfish side does not reject the suggestion out of hand. You act upon

the outside (given to you by a spirit – who is either your guardian angel or a spirit looking after the poor soul in need) and the inside (via your own enlightenment) inclinations.

### **Simplicity of Habits**

The winding down of pretentious affectations occurs naturally as you become more genuine. Time spent on pure self-aggrandizement dwindles away as you focus on your moral needs and the needs of others.

For instance, my wife and I went through a phase of enjoying wine. We sampled different types and had a pleasant time wine tasting. Thankfully, I found that after I graduated to about twenty dollars a bottle wine, I could not taste the difference of anything more expensive. Lucky me!

We would buy what pleased us and stockpiled some vintages we liked. This became a pastime, a diversion we could pursue on the weekends.

Once we discovered Spiritism and became engrossed in studying about the spirit realm and our place within it ... we abandoned the hobby of discovering, purchasing, and storing wine. It became unimportant to our lives. It became an afterthought.

Now, if we feel like a bottle of wine, when we go to the store, we may pick one up and it will last us over multiple days. We had simply left that pursuit behind, like a child changes one toy for another, without looking back.

This process replicates itself in everything you do. The useless pastimes are discarded. Your daily routine fills up with edifying tasks replacing the previous time-killing hobbies.

Fortifying your spiritual nature defeats the urges toward materialism. You finally realize the true value of an object – it has none in the long term and is only good for its immediate functionality in the short term. Only your immortal spirit retains value.

### **A Spirit of Renovation**

As your habits evolve, you turn inward to the task of self-improvement – you become conscious of the urge to re-make yourself. As your will becomes reinforced with certainty – faith in yourself, the spirit realm, and

your predetermined educational track during this lifetime – you begin to actually see that you are not a physical body, who was born and is destined to decompose back into the earth.

You are in fact a work in progress and will be for an eternity. One life is nothing. If you could improve just a single aspect of your character to perfection in each life, you would ascend at a rapid pace.

Most of us spend countless lives parked at a level and repeat the same mistakes over and over again. Only with great suffering are we pushed out of our habits and make drastic changes. Think how we could soar to the heights of heaven once we consciously plan to progress!

Following the advice of the poem will set the environment ... a launching pad, for a dramatic ascension. Spiritual growth isn't a long upward sloping line over millennia, but a hockey stick up to the sky after a tremendously lengthy duration of lives learning practically nothing, then a light turns on and the person finally discovers and embraces the truth of our stay on earth. Only then does real progress begin in earnest.

Merely attempting to put in practice the spiritual routine prescribed by the spirit Andre Luiz will set the stage for all subsequent incarnations. Blueprints for upcoming lives will be created for an emphasis on educational opportunities instead of dramas designed to effect major character alterations. Everything will be better.

The future will be bright for those determined to walk a new path. A path, still strewn with obstacles, but one that will forever transform one's character and personality. There is no greater treasure that we can take back with us after physical life than an improved sense of living and loving our fellow humans.

### **Fostering of Tolerance**

Once you determine that our bodies on Earth are mere temporary receptacles to place our spirits into so we may survive and learn the lessons assigned to us; then we understand that any race, creed, and social strata that we come into the world is but an entry point for the particular curriculum that has been chosen for our benefit.

Human bodies are like the vehicles that hold the thrill seekers at the rides in Disneyland. For instance, in Mr. Toad's Wild Ride (one of my favorites, since I was young), two or three people step into a modified representation of an early 1900s car. They experience the ride, the lights, the sounds, and moments of distractions, then they depart.

The color of the old-fashion car is unimportant. What is vital is that you went through the ride. During the excursion, time seemed to move slowly, since your senses were bombarded with new stimuli. But when you exited the car, you realized the journey was only a few minutes in duration. This is what your physical life will seem like after you leave your dense body – the vehicle for your short ride on earth – behind.

Spiritism tells us that all spirits are created equally, and all will achieve perfection. In the spirit world we fashion our outward appearance to suite our desires. I have read of many variations of size, color, and appearance of spirits.

Many spirits come from other planets and only spend a relatively short time in a human body, then they return to their preferred shape after their excursion on earth. Hence, as spirits, we determine our own image. It is usually a reflection of the state of our spirituality, mind, will, thoughts and desires.

Therefore, to judge on any exterior qualities of the dense human suit we are assigned is a waste of time. There are stories from Spiritist literature of Roman generals becoming slaves in their next life and slaves becoming people of great spiritual wisdom in their subsequent existence. Kings and queens, who were once mighty and powerful, find themselves disfigured, poor, and sickly in their next life. Each according to their deeds.

### **Courage to Place Yourself Second to Serving**

Every line of the poem written by the spirit Andre Luiz, builds upon each other, and all is targeted toward our internal reformation. One can only tear down one's inner ego by setting aside one's pride and objectively examining one's character.

Selfishness and pride are hard traits to let go of. I know, I still hang on to both. When I least expect it, my pride emerges like a dormant volcano. Suddenly, I feel defensive about some comment made or not made. Our

self-importance invades every part of our body. Finding each trace will take time and effort. Nevertheless, each small victory remains with us for eternity.

While the accumulation of houses, boats, jewelry, stock, and bonds are but transitory, lasting an infinitesimal amount of time compared to life spent in the spirit universe; the acquiring of the capacity of love, humbleness, kindness, compassion, faith, and intellectual curiosity are attributes which follow you forever. Like the university degree or the acquiring of a skill is a trait that can never be lost.

Superiority in spiritual level is the inverse of reaching the commanding heights of earthly power. As humans rise, they become more use to service by others, to legions of staff to do their bidding. They feel they deserve the acquiescence of those they rule. They begin to think they are in control because they are innately better than their fellow beings.

While in the spirit realm, I read in numerous passages how higher spirits attempt to hide their obvious superiority. They put themselves out for their lesser brethren and do for them whatever best will assist them. They never lord it over their inferiors.

These bright lights of the universe live the credo, “courage to place yourself second to serving.” In service they discover great enjoyment and fulfillment ... in the knowledge of pulling up their brothers and sisters higher in the hierarchy of heaven.

### **Perseverance in Goodness**

The last line of the poem is an exhortation to remain on course. To not let external factors sway you from your spiritual goal. No matter what befalls you, do not lose heart and dedication to try to do the best for those around you. Goodness does not just extend to others, but to yourself as well.

Do Good for yourself – it entails difficulties. One must study, work to reform habits, analyze, plan, and act upon each blemish discovered in one’s character. This is much harder than concentrating on being fraternal and charitable. It involves learning basic truths about oneself, about society and

culture and how it affects you. It means that in many circumstances one must swim against the tide.

To consciously reject the basic tenets of our popular consumerist environment means that old friends will drop away, not out of spite, but because you will no longer desire what they desire. It will occur naturally; your tastes will slowly divert from theirs.

But some past friends will become closer and new ones will appear. Those who detect your basic decency and non-judgmental character. They will see you as a beacon of light and will seek out your advice. For they know, whatever you tell them, it is not said out of self-interest, but out of concern for their future.

Therefore, follow Andre's advice, persist in spreading warmth, love, and goodness. The ripples of your deeds will eventually find you and your repayment will be one hundredfold whatever you invested.

### **Spiritism**

Spiritism, also called Christian Spiritism, is a doctrine, not a religion. There is no dogma to follow without reason. There are no diet or dress restrictions. There are no rote prayers or rituals.

Spiritism is not an external cloak one wears, but a tonic for your soul. In its base, it is intellectual, with a coating of emotion. Spiritism does not grab you because of any extravagant promises. Spiritism shines a light on what is possible, but to get there is a trek. A hard slog through muddy terrain.

Spiritism does not push you to go to street corners and announce the Third Revelation, it merely asks that you be there when people inquire or need help.

Spiritism merely lays out why you are here, how you can graduate from this place, who is guiding this campus of earth and your personal destiny – which is always meant to educate, not to punish.

Spiritism is like a thick book left on the table. It has been there for years, waiting for you to read it. But when you look at the size of the effort to consume it, you hesitate. Unbeknownst to you, there is a gold coin beneath it. But once you start, and begin to understand the ramifications of its contents, your life changes.

Everything, every occurrence, every person around you is seen under a different perspective. You begin to understand, to fully comprehend the world around you. For the first time you realize the injustices of the world are here for a purpose. You see the innocent being downtrodden and the rich taking advantage and you shake your head in the acknowledgement that all is happening to teach everyone valuable lessons. That someday, in some life, the rich will trade places with the poor, so each and every soul may be well-rounded and learn to love and be honest in every circumstance.

And as the light peers into your soul, your character transforms, you begin to improve. You live life happier, because the small things don't bother you like they did before. The large things do not knock you for a loop like they did before. The waves, that used to crash against you and shake your foundations, become still.

And, when you find that gold coin under the book, you realize that it stands for your new self, the new me, the reformed ego and id. You know that you have the only treasure that you can take with you after death – your improved personality, ready to meet your new friends in heaven and start your next adventure in your immortal journey to perfection.







## **Section 4 – The Future**

The future is certain – how and when we get there is in question. The spirit realm, led by our Father Jesus Christ, has guided our planet before its formation. The Earth was once a lifeless planet, to our knowledge. In reality, spirits are everywhere, the planet was used as a station for spirits, until it matured enough to hold life capable of supporting a free willed soul, in a physical location. Then we entered the primitive planet stage. It lasted until the first vestiges of civilization began to appear. Now we are in a planet of atonement.

The Earth is chaotic, cruel, and ruthless, solely because it must be to house billions of spirits who require lessons to reach the next stage of civilization. We have been churning in this meat grinder of a world for thousands of years. Slowly, our impurities have been removed. Not yet perfectly, but better than before.

There are more people upon our campus who are ready for the next level, than at any other time. Still less than half but approaching that magic number. Spiritism notifies us that when more than half of the world are people who would qualify to reach heaven, then and only then will the world begin to change rapidly. For the half not yet ready will see the example and feel the pressure to conform to the moral superiority of the other half.

Hence, as spirits who have no intention of improving are leaving their physical life and then shuttled off to other, less developed planets, the Earth will have more enlightened spirits reincarnating. The numbers of good versus ignorant will finally weigh in favor of the good.

Spiritism, via mediums, has announced that we are at the beginning of becoming a planet of regeneration. This will not seem vastly different to our generation. This is a ponderous process of each individual deciding to follow the light instead of their immediate physical desires.

Therefore, we shall become a regenerative planet. But the exact timing depends upon our collective will to attain it, by demonstrating the required attributes to deserve to live on a world turned into a paradise.

### **The Regenerative Planet**

Living on a planet of regeneration, what will it be like? Leon Denis, Spiritism medium and author of many books in the late 19<sup>th</sup> century gives us a glance. He foreshadows how humans and spirits will forge a new relationship in the future. Whereas before, the spirit realm was full of shadows, in the centuries ahead we shall interact and commune. Leon describes the effect:

“It will be in the frequent and conscious communion with the world of spirits that the geniuses of the future will obtain the elements for their work. From now, the penetration into the secrets of this double life is going to offer man assistance and light which the failing religions are no longer able to procure for him. In all domains this spiritual idea is going to fertilize thought and work. Science will owe it the discovery of incalculable forces and the conquest of an occult universe. It will owe to it a complete renovation of its theories and its methods. Philosophy will gain from it a more extended and more exact knowledge of human personality. The religions of the future will find in spiritual research the proofs of the survival of the soul and the rules of life in the Beyond, at the same time with the principle of close union toward the common Father.

Art under all forms will discover in it inexhaustible sources of inspiration and emotion. The man of the people, in his hours of lassitude, will find moral courage in it, and he will comprehend that the soul can grow by humble labor as well as by loftier tasks, and that no duty is negligible – that envy is sister to hate – and that often one is less happy in luxury than in mediocrity. In it the sceptic will find faith, the discouraged hope and virile resolutions; all those who suffer, the profound idea that a law of justice presides over all things: that there is not in any domain effect without a cause, no victory without combat – no triumph without hard efforts, and that above all reigns perfect and majestic law, and that no soul is abandoned by God, of whom it is a part.

Thus will operate slowly the renovation of humanity, still so young, so ignorant of itself, but whose desire will carry it, little by little, toward the comprehension of its tasks and its aims at the same time that its field of exploration and its perspective enlarge. With each step gained, seeing and desiring more, feeling the center within itself and enlivened,

it will see also the shadows disappearing – the somber enigmas of the world resolving – and the way brightened by powerful rays of light. With the shadows will vanish, little by little, narrow prejudices, vain terrors, and apparent contradictions of the universe. Harmony will reign and man will feel his heart and his thoughts enlarged. He will advance anew toward the end of his work, yet his work has no end – for each time humanity lifts itself toward a new ideal which it believes to be the supreme ideal, it has in truth attained only to the system corresponding to its own degree of evolution. But each time also, from every effort made toward higher ideals, will flow new forces and new pleasures, and it will find in the joy of life and progression, which is the law of being, a more intimate communion with the universe, and a more complete possession of goodness and beauty.” <sup>[45]</sup>

Certainty of the spirit universe and all that entails shall be the foundation of the new planet of regeneration. It shall guide us in all things. We shall have no doubts about being watched over by superior spirits, the effects of our actions, and our moral compass will be immovable posts.

This is the future of a planet of regeneration. We shall know we are tied to the spirit realm. Proof will be all around us and inside of us. All our trivial fears and anxieties will melt away. We shall realize our place in the universe and that will provide comfort and support for our pursuits. We shall understand that any task gained, with an eye to accumulating wisdom, will be a victory, even though the end goal may not be what we had originally envisioned.

The future as defined by Leon Denis is bolstered by reports from spirits who have come from an advanced planet to assist the Earth. In the book *Planetary Transition*, psychographed by Divaldo Franco, the spirit Manoel Philomeno de Miranda, tells us what these spirits described to him about their planet:

“In our sphere of spiritual action, for example, the landscapes are rich with incomparable tonalities, sunrises and sunsets imbued with lights of indefinable hues, gardens, springs gushing crystal-clear water, flowers in multi-colored garlands and sweet, penetrating fragrances, schools and theaters for intellectual and moral training, exemplary hospitals and sanatoriums that will inspire future buildings on the earth – as is

already happening – and art galleries in all genres, where fine artists hone their skills in order render the earth a paradisiacal planet ...

Laboratories for planning and projects for discovering the Laws that govern the planet and the cosmos, diligent work to eradicate the diseases and disorders that still predominate on the planet, and meetings enriched with wisdom entailing lofty discussions and conversations about life and its existential purpose ...

Universities for delving into the most advanced knowledge, preparing teams of spirits illuminated by love and cultural information with the mission of preparing new and successive generations for the future of a happy humanity ...

Spectacles of light and sound in direct contact with nature, which itself is dressed in precious, vibratory garb to edify and help us bless her with our gratitude; high-quality plays and poetry, not to mention living libraries filled with books that bear the images of those who wrote them, including their emotions; video libraries and virtual images on special computers, and superior television broadcasts communications – all meant for the ennoblement of individuals and their inner achievements ...

There are also rooms, not always available to everybody, where the past experiences of the local inhabitants are archived. The only ones that have access to them are those who have attained a significant level of evolution so that, consulting the past, they can plan the future, overcoming their innermost conflicts ...

Life is a hymn of immeasurable magnitude honoring the Creator.” [\[46\]](#)

This is an image of people working together, supporting each other in the fields that each desire for their own path to perfection. A place where love and harmony are the rule, not the exception. A place where you are in touch with the Creator. A place where you understand why you are on Earth and your part to play.

Certainty instead of hesitation and focus as opposed to apathy are the benefits of living in a world where only those who have climbed the stairs of spiritual learning are allowed. An exclusive club, but one without any barriers to entry except each person’s dedication.

## **Prophecy will Guide Us**

How will we know what to do to commence this wonderful era? The spirit world will tell us. Not in one speech, or one sign, but in many ways.

We have all awaited the word of God. We are anxious to discover the true path. Spiritism, by its rigorous training to perceive the accurate versus the false message (not always, but mostly) from the other side, supplies us with the guidance we require to determine the right road to follow. In the future, Spiritism, in the many Spiritist centers, in different cities, within their medium's meetings are a force to consistently supply to their adherents the words to follow.

Therefore, more Spiritist centers will be developed in cities throughout the world. We shall require multiple channels of communication with the spirit realm. While many shall possess a reliable dialog with their spirit mentors or guardian angels, others will require a more formal setting to receive the words of Christ and God.

The teachings of Christ, while the messages of love and charity are everlasting, the choices in the future, whether technology or culturally will be supplied to those who ask. Spiritism is dynamic, it believes that as we learn and mature, more advanced, complicated, and intricate, messages will be received. These will illuminate the avenue to choose to achieve our goals.

Throughout history prophets have led. Some false and others true. Whole cultures have been misled into cruelty and destruction. But with the advent of careful and reasoned communication, available to many, the right transmissions will be identified, and the false will be exposed. Giving entire populations confidence in the word of superior spirits.

During the time of Christ many were gifted with mediumistic ability. The same wave of prophesying is occurring now. People who have rejected the mere presence of God, will be shown the light and they will add their voices to the spiritual evolution of Earth.

## **Role of Prophecy**

Therefore, as we go through life, we must keep our eyes and ears open. As Jesus said, those who have eyes to see and ears to hear. He did not mean

the normal everyday use of our senses, but that extra level of vigilance. That alertness, where we are ready to respond to a change of direction or answer a clarion call. Or to hear the whisper of our guardian angel.

These calls will come more frequently as we approach pivotal events on the road to become a planet of regeneration. It may not seem to be of importance, but the spirit world is patient and thorough. If you detect a signal and your body responds with positive vibrations in concert with the validation of your conscience, then act.

Messages may come from meditation, inspiration, mediums, conversations from trusted friends or family, or a wave of spiritual feelings washing over an entire population. These will always be rooted in love, peace, and mercy – when the signs are morally correct then decisive action should be initiated. Keeping in mind that all communications with the other side should be judicially and impartially evaluated. While some erroneous messages may filter through, those who were innocents who were misled should be forgiven and educated.

### **The Future of Earth is Certain**

Christ, the leader of our planet, all the heavens, and all the regions below, has laid out the direction of the Earth. The spirit Arnel has seen it. He and other spirits were shown the impending destiny of earth to illustrate the goal they are working toward. In a vast chamber, a large globe appeared:

“As it went round upon its axis there appeared shapes of lands and waters upon its outer circumference. These were not coterminous in outline with those of earth as they are today. We were now being shown our future sphere of work, and these were changing as they are now changing on earth’s surface, but more quickly. The ages ahead of you were foreshortened for us and we read them as a moving model.

There appeared also the cities and their peoples and animals also, and the engines which the people made for their several uses. And as the globe turned its surface to us, continually revolving, we were able to see the progress of it all.

I mean this; take, in token of other lands, your own islands. I noted them first as they will be a few years hence. Then they sailed round out of

view. When they came before us again they had become changed a little in configuration of coastlines, and as to their cities and people. So, as the globe revolved, these lands, and the whole human race and their works of building and engines of locomotion and all their handiwork progressed in their ages, but condensed from millennia into hours. I must suit my words to your way of thinking, my son. Years have not the same significance to us as they have to you.

Now it would not be permitted to me to fish for you in the deeps of future ages. You of earth must net your own supper. That is as it should be. Nevertheless, it is permitted to me to tell you where the fishing-ground are like to be. Then those who will think of me as a good admiral will set their sail to my chart, and out upon their quest. So.

Now, the earth became more beautiful as it sailed round upon its voyage of the ages. The light increased upon its surface, and its mass became more radiant from within. The peoples also hurried not so greatly here and there, for nature had become more at one with them and yielded more genially to their abundance. So their lives were less fevered and more given to meditation. Thus they became ever more in harmony one with others, and all of them more nearly attuned to us who were able, in our turn, to spend upon them a larger degree of our power and of our sweeter pace.

As this attunement advanced it enthused us with a largess of happiness to know we had gained for ourselves, after much stress of warfare, these younger companions of our ancient race. It was very sweet to us, my son.

And gradually earth itself was changed.” [\[47\]](#)

Thus, spoke Arnel about Earth. He saw the British Isles change as the centuries progressed. He witnessed the world, the technology, the people all transformed as millennia after millennia flew by in a simulation of that which will occur on Earth as dictated by God and carried out by legions of spirits following commands from Christ.

Hence, we are all part of a collective leap forward. Those of us who desire to be part of the journey shall be. We shall slowly forget the old dramas of our previous lives and bask in the warmth and sunshine of a new

era. But the ride is not free. It has a cost, it must be won with hard work, dedication, and study. Our inner selves must be fashioned correctly to be able to enter this new paradise.

Arnel told the Rev. G. Vale Owen how each one of us, those who have chosen the path to the light, will accompany the Earth to a higher state. Next Arnel speaks of the finale - the last act of the earth as it became wholly transformed:

“Earth, as we beheld it before us, had come to that stage when the ethereal and the material had almost equal place in content. The bodies of men were still of matter, but purified and more readily co-responsive with the heavens of spirit life than in former times – these same times in which you live today.

Earth had responded to the upliftment, and the vegetation which it produced lay upon its bosom almost sentient as a babe upon his mother’s breast.

No kingdoms were upon earth, but one confederacy of peoples whose colors were not so diverse, each from other, as they are today.

Science also was not the science of Europe as it is now, but the powers of ethereal dynamics being understood, the whole life of men was transformed.” [\[48\]](#)

In the future, we are lighter, we easily communicate with the spirit realm, we are at peace and we live together as one, in harmony. But it was not just humans that were changed – everything else was too.

Minerals, which made up the earth were charged to be in harmony with our planet. Plant life was given the ability to respond to our thoughts. Animals had increased sensations and personalities. The ethereal intelligence of the universe inundated all of earth, giving each division of inorganic and organic life a boost. A little more awareness, an increased sense of connectivity, and a place within the vibrations and harmony of the earth.

Arnel describes the earth as radiant, with living entities covering the surface. He tells us that “Earth now shone like one great and very beautiful pearl, but with veins of green and gold and crimson and amber and blue



upon it. And within it shone its native light aglow with fire of worship about its heart, which throbbed with life and happiness as the impulses of the Creative Lords and their myriads invaded it and wooed from it this responsive and shimmering loveliness.” [\[49\]](#)

Paradise awaits us. It is not something we have to travel towards. It does not entail a physical journey. To arrive at paradise takes an arduous mental trek, a trip to re-wire our personalities. To cut off ties from excessive material desires. To rid ourselves of primitive emotions – hate, envy, pride, and selfishness. To step forward toward the light, in all humbleness, open to learn that which we have resisted for so many lives. That love is the greatest force in the universe, that kindness and respect for all is the foundation upon which paradise shall be created.





## **Chapter 9 – It's All Planned Out**

As shown in the previous section, the future of the Earth has been set. Christ and his ministers, working under the directions given to them by God, have planned the outcome of our globe.

Therefore, when Christ deems that something will occur – it will. But how? Spiritism tells us there are no miracles, no magic wands that are waved and the Earth and its entire population are suddenly transformed. Instead, it is a slow and deliberate march. Not in a straight line, but overall progress is measurable.

In Section Three, the rise and fall of Rome, and the decline of Europe was described. Whole empires and cultures were set onto a trajectory to bring them to certain ends. Christ and His ministers utilize many methods to achieve their detailed plans.

And for each plan there are backup contingencies. For example, the Apostle Paul, who was not part of the original Apostles, while Jesus was alive, was deliberately kept in reserve. Christ knew the other Apostles had the tendency to focus on their own tribe and to exclude the gentiles. Paul was brought forth to rectify that situation.

Another example was the Great Codifier, Allan Kardec, who brought Spiritism to the world's attention, by his questions to spirits, via many mediums, in the 1850s. A modern day medium asked the spirits, what would have happened if Allan Kardec failed? The answer came back that there were fifty Kardec like humans on Earth all charged with the same task. In fact, one of them, Andrew Jackson Davis, was an American medium, who revealed many of the same precepts as Allan Kardec. While Andrew Davis made some impression upon the United States at the time, it was not lasting.

### **Chess Pieces**

Imagine the Earth being a chess board. The game never stops. Pieces are placed and removed from the board as they make their moves. A king may fall, only to come back as another important player, or as a lowly pawn.

An example of this is Charlemagne. He unified western and central Europe in late seven hundred A.D. After the fall of Rome, the area of the late empire was scattered and was prey to other tribes. The spirit world wished to provide a better structure which would protect the nascent countries that would eventually arise from the Dark Ages. Therefore, they took a successful Roman Emperor and repurposed him to be incarnated as Charles, who would later be known as Charles the Great – who unified vast territories under his control.

To kickstart the Renaissance, the spirit realm selected the great sculptors, painters, musicians, and writers of Ancient Greece during the time of the rise and power of Athens. Which reached its peak during the reign of Pericles. These talented men and women were then incarnated in Italy to propel Europe out of the Dark Ages and into the intellectual and creative heights of the Renaissance. This was not an overnight transformation, it took hundreds of years to prepare and to blossom, with many incarnations in support of the geniuses who are still known to us today.

Not all moves work out the way they were planned. This is because each soul coming to Earth still have their free will. While they may have promised to fulfill a certain mission on our planet while they were in the spirit world, once they dawned their physical covering and were influenced by material life, things may turn out differently. The spirit world is full of stories of spirits who have failed in their assignments. In fact, most do fail.

Napoleon is an example of a partial failure. His mission was to reorganize France after the revolution. He was to bring order and enlightened management to his country. He did create the Napoleonic code and introduced many needed reforms. He also emphasized meritocracy over birth right appointments. Unfortunately, his military genius got the better of him and he conquered Europe. The spirit realm knew he was going too far when he launched his expedition to Egypt. Spirits reported that he spent valuable time in self-analysis during his stay on the island of Saint Helena.

Hence, no piece is gone forever. It is always possible to reuse a spirit who volunteers for a new assignment (free will always being respected). The ability to load certain people and skill sets into specified times and places is a powerful tool to manipulate the destiny of the world.

On the other hand, imagine that when you place your hand on a piece and expect it to move to your desired square, it goes awry. It misses completely and does not perform your desired move. This is the great negative, the sand or wet snow in the road that retards all forward movement. And often drives the car off the road.

Therefore, plans are made, contingencies are placed, and still the path is not driven perfectly straight. This is what the spirit realm must deal with on a daily basis. Some spirits do an admirable job, while the majority are unable or unwilling to follow the original directions.

Instead of a chess board, the Earth is like a digital game, where there are hidden traps, and the next disaster is awaiting. Nevertheless, the hero cannot perish. His or her life might be hellish or luxurious, but they cannot die. They will live again and again, until victory is assured.

Therein lies a benefit. Each time a spirit comes to Earth, they gain experience. Although they may fail, when they return, they are determined to not repeat their same mistakes. Eventually, they become veterans. They are the non-commissioned officers who make up the backbone of any army. In other words, they are reliable and competent.

With enough tried and tested troops the maneuvers are carried out. Not perfectly, but within the range desired. Therefore, we, as a collective whole, are guided from one era to another.

### **Spirits Sent on Missions**

An example of a spirit, who has had a history of success is Shonar. He is a specialist. A spirit that comes into a country after it has been drenched in blood, through revolution or other causes, and right the ship, so the nation may begin to rebuild again.

Shonar had been incarnated in Russia multiple times, always after periods of great fighting and chaos. He helped pick up the pieces and reorganized the countryside to bring forth an interlude of tranquility. He also came to France, during the time of the French revolution and most likely assisted in the toppling of Robespierre, who had unleashed the guillotine. Who he was at each epoch, we were not told, but he must have been influential.

As a spirit he appeared to be the part he played on Earth. He wore a tunic, but the tunic appeared as if it was armor. He demonstrated strength in his countenance. Between physical lives, he led an outpost in the Lower Zone, teaching those within his sphere that he was loving and merciful if followed, but stern and unyielding to those who wished to maintain their rebelliousness. They were given a choice, get in line or leave.

While he may seem harsh from the above description, he was full of love and mercy. He took an interest in each of the spirits who came looking to find the lighted path. Those who knew him loved him and those who advanced under his tutelage remained with him and loyal.

Such is the character of a spirit, who could don a physical covering and remain true to his assignment. While, probably born noble and rich, he did not seek after more, he did not grasp the ultimate power, even though he was intelligent enough to do so easily. Instead, he had an innate sense of justice, which trumped any other desire.

Imagine the iron discipline to not take the wealth and position which could fall into your hands with a slight push. Shonar knew himself and what would be the right path in the midst of gore and lawlessness. He brought order from chaos.

Shonar is illustrative of an advanced spirit. A soul, who whether in spirit or in a physical body governs himself by his inner will and conscience. These types of valiant soldiers who remain unheralded, are the backbone of humanity's march to the next level.

While the great prophets, such a Socrates, Buddha, and Lao Tzu, to name a few are the inspiration that motivates our collective from one plateau to the next, the spirits like Shonar are the engines that drive us forward.

Hence, Christ is always planning the next move with the right pieces to set up the board for victory. And when one match is completed another begins.

### **Complexity**

This game, the advancement of humanity, which span eons, recycles souls, and introduces successive new eras of understanding and knowledge

is the ultimate role-playing machine. Christ does not focus on several main players. He accounts for billions of players. To assist Him, He has an array of ministers who are responsible for their selected areas. Nevertheless, Christ owns the board, the pieces, and the objectives – only the rules – derived from Divine Laws – are dictated to Him by God.

Hence, what may seem like one move, such as placing Allan Kardec in France in the 1800s, is a series of moves. There is the question of Allan Kardec's parents, his upbringing, his immediate family, his schooling, his daily life, diseases which must be avoided. Then there are his friends, his profession, and his wife to be. A million interactions with thousands of people, all for him to reach the point where he could begin his mission to document what the Spirit of Truth desired to communicate to the world.

Intricate plans must be developed, then tracked, and a legion of spirits, on the ground, actively monitoring individual progress and circumstances, to insure each person has the opportunity to follow their blueprint. The number of intersections with others, who each have their own destiny, must be staggering.

What is comforting, is that this is not the first time the game has been played. Other high spirits, on the level of Christ or above, have also herded whole planets of spirits to perfection. Therefore, books have been written, patterns identified, and techniques constructed to guide the masters of the game in their play. Billions of souls in a quest for improvement, must have established certain tendencies, and the solutions must have been fashioned for most situations.

Hence, a wise and ancient panoply of high lords have been through this before. Christ is most probably the benefactor of their acquired skill. Therefore, we shall be led, and we shall advance. But there are even more tools to manipulate the game of humanity – spirits from advanced planets.

### **Help from Other Worlds**

As the spirit realm is guiding our civilization from one stage to the next, they use every resource that is available. This includes volunteers from more evolved planets. These dedicated servants of good, sacrifice themselves to travel to a backward planet to be incarnated here to be an example of how a mature spirit should behave. These selfless angels will

grow to be part of our major institutions and help them move from a selfish to a service foundation.

They were not brought to Earth to be pivotal figures in history. They are to be bright illustrations of what humanity should aspire to. They shall be the wise and kind models that people will look up to in their respective endeavors. Whether they are politicians, teachers, doctors, or scientists – they shall serve as reminders of what each of us are capable of once we release our selfish desires.

They will have parents, spiritually inferior to themselves, and they will act as an inspiration to them. They will not have to suffer the tragic episodes in their life like the rest of us. They have already ascended and have successfully cast off their primitive urges. They will be afflicted by common diseases, such as colds, flus, and other minor infections. But they will not have major illnesses, such as cancer or heart problems.

They can be detected. If you know of a person who is constantly calm, rarely angry, never vindictive and seems to sail through life without any major tragedies, then this person may have come to us from a world of regeneration.

We know this because of a book *Planetary Transition*, that the spirit Manoel Philomente de Miranda delivered to the Spiritist medium Divaldo Franco, in Chapter 14 we are notified that spirits have been arriving in the spheres around earth to be ready to incarnate amongst us to serve as inspirations to the rest of humankind.

Manoel reports on the status of these selfless individuals and their journey to our planet of atonement:

“Actually, other caravans had already been visiting the earth for the same purpose since the 1970s and 80s, preparing for the invaluable incarnations to come. However, now was the time to intensify the exchange between earth’s inhabitants and the visitors from Alcyone, who were already active in the planet’s psychosphere waiting for the appropriate time.”

(note in the quote above: Alcyone is the brightest star in the Pleiades Cluster. It is approximately 440 light years from Earth) <sup>[50]</sup>



These great missionaries will come and be born and eventually rise to become men and women who will shine as examples in politics, medicine, science, commerce, and as teachers. It will take time for them to achieve positions of power and influence. You will probably begin to see the effect of their presence around the years 2040 to 2050.

Their sacrifice is tremendous. Think how you would react if you were transported from your comfortable house and lifestyle back to the primitive life of the jungle on some remote island. This is what one of the Earth leaders told the group of volunteers:

“The great and noble days of the Lord of the Vineyard have arrived.

You have come from another dimension to work with the Liberator of consciences and you have accepted the task of helping build the era of peace and love.

You are accustomed to the harmony of your own world, where there is no more suffering, despair, crime or heinousness.

You will face difficult battles as you deal with violence and rebelliousness, remnants of the primitivism that still prevails in countless individuals on our planet.

You will be asked to demonstrate fraternity when conflicts and disagreements erupt. You will face outright animosity amongst those whom you will live. You will have to bear the painful weight of the constant dissatisfaction of those that will be part of your family and activities. You will use the instruments of friendship to struggle against stubborn and fierce hatred. You will have to understand your assailants, who never seek to understand the other and who always think they are right. You will suffer slander and defamation, unhealthy competition, and the ingratitude of those in whom you deposit your trust and benevolence. They will twist your words and will threaten you in the most cowardly ways. You will experience disgrace and humiliation ... Even so, Jesus will be with you at all times.

You will walk on rock-strewn pathways marked by impediments, but that will not be a problem for you, because you are used to overcoming obstacles and ascending the heights.

In all situations, remember that you are guests on a planet in transition, invited to make it a paradise after continuous storms that will shake it.

You will triumph if you remain faithful to love and fraternity, open to compassion and mercy.

Go visit the homes where you will dwell, practicing patience and courage alongside your future families unaccustomed to the standards of goodness and justice, understanding and equality.

Let yourselves be emotionally touched by the agonizing brothers and sisters that still swarm on our beloved planet. Comfort them, and inspire them with the joy of living and with gratitude to God for the opportunity for moral and spiritual growth.

You will be *the salt of the earth* , maintaining its taste in order to make the days you live in the somatic body better.

You will experience the limitation of the physical body, trying to trap you in the heavy robes of matter; however, during your hours of physical rest, you will return to our sphere of action, where you will be comforted and encouraged to continue your missionary endeavor.

Ambassadors of the Good, remain in the battle for Peace, always loving, and never armed with any emotional weapon of belligerence or animosity.

Welcome to the earth!

May God bless your ministry planned by Jesus!" [\[51\]](#)

It must be hard to gauge the difficulties of life on our globe for someone who has not had to put up with the pettiness, betrayal, and general animosity that is present on our planet. We are used to it. While we may be upset for a while, we learn to move on, since we understand that we are lucky to find a small group of friends who are loyal and supportive.

In essence, through many lives, we have learned to have high standards for ourselves, while our expectations for others is low. Imagine a world where this is no longer necessary, where you are truly treated as you would treat others – the Golden Rule would be always in force. Where you are in harmony with your friends, family, and colleagues at work.

This is exactly what we are toiling towards, with the assistance of wonderful and kind spirits who had already climbed out of a planet of atonement and did not need to return.

### **The Evolution has Begun**

Hence, with the maneuvers of the spirit realm in full throttle – strategic and tactical incarnations, illustrious examples to be followed, high spirits coming to lead spiritual revolutions – our planet shall be transformed. It is unavoidable. Once enough people are placed in critical positions, who are in tune with the aspirations of Christ, our world will evolve.

And it is not starting from a dead stop. All history up to now has been designed to build from this point onward. In our small view, this argument seems indefensible. We have recently left the bloodiest century in world history. The 20<sup>th</sup> century had two world wars and the scourge of fascism and communism. All detriments to society. More people have been killed by wars and artificial quests for utopia than ever before.

Even now the false idol of a perfect society beckons many. Most of these people are well meaning and hope to create a paradise on Earth. They do not understand that paradise can only be created by the goodness of everyone – not enforced by sending to the gulag any outlier. Thankfully, for the majority, they have seen or read of the destruction wrought by seeking artificial and material solutions to societies problems. They understand that a spiritual evolution must occur before any answers can be found to solve fundamental injustice in our culture.

A new and improved world is not created by mandates from above, but from the overall goodness shining from below. By the acts of love, charity, fraternity, and honesty emanating from each of us. The path to a planet of regeneration is a collective effort, based upon the selfless desires and quest to be of service.

This transformation, this realization of what we must become is the objective of the guidance and machinations of the spirit realm. It is to set up the environment whereby we may analyze our current situation and determine that inner changes must occur before we can effect outer transformations.

Via this collective realization, which shall be gradual, and caused by many factors – spread of Spiritism, personal examples, leaders, institutions, and religions providing the true path to the light – the Earth shall transform into a planet of regeneration. Where in some future incarnation, we shall be able to live, love, and thrive in a paradise.





## **Chapter 10 – Our Individual Future**

There is in the belief in Christ and Spiritism an added dimension to your life. A sense of wellness and calm in whatever situation you may find yourself. The spirit of Christ, once infused deep in your heart, combined with the understanding of the spirit universe and your place within it, leads you to acknowledge your immortality and your eventual ascent to the highest levels of heaven. Knowing that you are always protected, always have time, always have a second chance, and are always loved provides an invisible and indestructible coat of armor which supplies the courage to withstand any ill-wind. For all events are temporary, while you are infinite.

### **The Journey**

Infinite in a multifaceted and impossibly dense structure. Where, depending upon your acquired powers, you have capabilities beyond your imagination.

We often dream, but do not expect to become omnipotent gods. But that is exactly what we shall become. The genius of God is that we are not allowed to become invincible beings while we have the least amount of wrongful thinking remaining. Only those who can handle absolute power without corruption may attain this state.

Hence, the journey is long and hard. All our regrets and complaints should vanish with the knowledge of the type of training we must undergo to reach perfection.

The length of each life, the number of lives, the varied circumstances, the luxuries, and the depths of poverty are all prerequisites. In the primitive and planets of atonements, we are working on one main aspect. The repurposing of our personality.

This is not a trivial task. It is a marathon with many exits and entrances. We must take what has served us well in the past – the ability to survive and thrive in a chaotic world – and completely turn it around – whereby we must eventually possess the talent to enable others to survive and thrive – while we watch on and assist where possible.

Imagine, the numerous feelings and emotions which must be eradicated and replaced in this pursuit. These primitive urges have served us well in

the past. Without selfishness, we could not have survived the harsh circumstances in which lower life forms must live. Without using our strength to take what we want we would have starved to death many times. Without excessive pride we would have been inconsequential and a slave to the more powerful.

Our primary urge to reach the top of whatever food chain we find ourselves locked into has been the driver of our past destiny. Each small infraction of our conscience, has to our mind, been in a good cause – ourselves. Only by utter ruthlessness and cunning have we been able to succeed.

This is the lesson we have learned since acquiring the first hint of free will. We had better make the selfish decision first before the other person takes advantage of the situation. We must strike – and strike hard and fast. This thinking carries over into all facets of our life. From work, relationships, plans, and even family life.

All petty dramas, treachery, avarice, intricate plans for revenge flow from the life lessons we learned so well. Those of strong character that we identify in our current culture, exhibit these primitive traits. Most would not be rich or famous without a certainty of purpose and lack of conscience.

Left to ourselves we would travel through life after life honing our sharper edges, until we would become a veteran gladiator who would be formidable in any contest of will power or strength. We would exhibit the outer form of a tower of competency and vigor. With the possibility of rolling over anyone in our path.

But beneath that veneer lies a little secret. Our regrets, our loneliness, our quest for love. All gifts from God, that at first act as little time bombs that burst forth in explosions of emotions in times of uncertainty. The implantation of a conscience and our instinct carried over from previous lives is the seed which will grow and envelope the old foundation. The roots of goodness will tear through the concrete and break it up into so many jagged pieces. Each to be discarded and replaced by superior stones of beauty and luminosity. Kindness seeps in and becomes the mortar to rebuild our base beliefs.

God knows all. God knows us and He has well figured out the necessary steps that we all must walk to become what He has intended for us. Christ is the great leader who understands and uses the Divine Laws to tactically guide our individual journeys to perfection.

Hence, what seems to us to be a tortuous, winding, and rocky road is the bitter medicine to extract our previous foundation to renew our character. The question could be put, "Why lay the wrong foundation in the first place?" I am not sure of the answer, but I believe it lies in two factors. One, the buildup of controlling ever more complex organisms in the physical plane demands we start small and primeval. Two, the very act of the creation, then the destruction and recreation of our personality ensures our uniqueness in the realm of trillions, if not more, spirits in the spirit universes.

The price to extract and then replace our inner morality is large. Great for us and for the spirit realm. Imagine if we were all born docile and sweet. What need would there be for countless campuses of primitive and worlds of atonement? Each planet is managed by a veritable army of spirits, who must toil excessively on our behalf. To civilize each ruffian.

On the other hand, we, who must run through the gauntlet, are whipped into shape in a manner most displeasing! Or so it appears to our still immature self. Nevertheless, it works, and it works well.

The lives of atonement, the limitations, the disappointments are not in vain. They all build toward a greater self. If we stood aside and peered into each plan for our life from the beginning of graduation to a free-will animal, we would be amazed at the cunning and genius invested on our behalf. Every small detail, every tug at our emotions has been planned and the results foreseen. Not always correctly, for we frequently refuse to take the bait, to comprehend the lesson delivered to us.

Often, we acquire the opposite that was intended for us. We chose to become sterner to get what we want and the teaching that that object was not necessary for our happiness was wasted. Hence, the lesson must be altered and intensified in the next life. Therefore, some of our trials are painful and dramatic. Not because we must be punished, but because we rebuffed the subtler lesson.



Eventually the overwhelming might of the constant machinations of the spirit realm breaks down our wall of pride and selfishness. Like the waves of the ocean grinding rocks into sand, we too metamorphosize. That little seed of internal beauty blossoms and takes us with it.

Our conscience becomes more dominant. Our resolve to hue the course of goodness becomes stronger. The exquisite joy in the little things of life, of beauty, of serving, of happiness in constructing yourself replaces the material pleasures and distractions.

As we prune our desires, our world appears calmer. Our imagined needs do not stress us. Our past lacking fades away. We begin to strive for something other than material gain, we strive for spiritual peace and understanding. We long to feel comfortable in our place on earth and with those around us.

All of this is part of the long trek. The great ascent up the spiritual ladder. Each rung brings its own rewards. Each paid for with our utmost effort, which makes the climb more enjoyable. For you have not been given an empty and underserving prize, you have fairly and honestly earned your place.

By removing one foundation and building another, composed of the advanced feelings of love, charity, fraternity, and honesty, you have unleashed a great potential of raw power. Power to perform fantastic feats of goodness. The ability to help and heal those in need. You will not need thanks, for the thanks that you desire resides in the benefits of the deed itself.

Upon victory a new world shall open. You will no longer be bound to the heavenly bands surrounding the Earth. You shall be introduced to other planets, other cultures, and other races to help and shepherd. When you incarnate again, it shall be done on advanced planets, where you will work with your spirit mentors to determine the courses you will take. All the while you shall be in closer connection to the spirit realm.

You will feel part of the greater whole to an extent never before felt. Everything shall be magnified, your ecstasy, your intellect, your storage of vast knowledge, and your circle of friends and mentors. You shall become an even more productive and cherished member of spirit society.

## The Reality

Our climb is accomplished within the bounds of the spirit and physical universes. To us they are infinite, but if there is a boundary, we cannot go past it. We are like the fish in an aquarium, that is vast and is bigger than the fish could ever swim to the end in a lifetime. The fact that there may be something beyond what God has wrought for us is immaterial. We are creatures made by God and placed within God's chosen domain.

If there is a beyond, it is unknowable for us. It is like asking who created God? It is a question that has no pertinent answer since we could never reach further than next to God. We should be content with the immense realm that has been bequeathed to us.

Hence, we live in a constricted environment, which encompasses infinity – which is a contradictory statement, but true when one looks at the entirety of the spirit realm from our point of view. Therefore, in our constructed environment our possibilities are endless.

I described, to the best of my ability, our environments in Chapters one and two. In full disclosure, I believe we are fundamentally unable to fully comprehend the complexity, flexibility, and elasticity of the spirit universe(s).

It is a reality presented to our senses. The ones we possess at any given level of advancement. Hence, the reality changes as we become more sophisticated and intelligent to understand what we are experiencing.

The environment may present itself to us as physical objects in which we can feel and touch and interact with. But objects that are malleable to our will, to the extent we have the seniority and power to do so. Our logical routines which operate as openings to the atmosphere outside of our base personality, can interpret the scenery around us in multiple fashions.

If our choice is to interact in the subjective spirit realm, where we fashion with our minds, then we are alive in the world created by capable high spirits. We talk with friends who appear physical. We live in buildings, that are organized to our specifications (if we built them) and find comfort in the walls and decorations within. We enjoy the familiarity.

Via the power of our will, we take Universal Fluid and shape it to our desire. We can manufacture our own little paradise, if that is our wish, or coordinate with groups of like-minded spirits to build vast cities and new lands.

An additional state is the freedom of dancing in the limitless array of knowledge. The universal database, the collector and recorder of all things fashioned by God to contain all within it. We can roam at will, depending on our level, and emerge back into a seemingly subjective spirit realm at ease. The scenery may change from the last place we visited, but we have not really moved, we just altered our state.

The land of data can be queried and transversed. A thread of knowledge can be traced in any direction. A past occurrence of history may be researched from multiple angles. The thoughts of each participants may be explored and analyzed by the experienced spirit. Whole histories are open to the intrepid explorer as well as entire clusters of life. To be looked at in raw data form and then to pop out into the contrived environment at a moments notice. This is the power of storing everything.

Lastly, we have the great restricted location – the physical world. Built to dam us off from marvelous freedom, so we may exercise only a fraction of our potential. All for the purpose to force the transformation of our character and personality.

Hence, the campus and classrooms selected by our spiritual superiors are unchangeable. We lost that power in the process of incarnation on a physical planet.

As we muddle through our assignments, we should never forget what is awaiting us when we return. A land so magical, so exquisite, that upon our return we shall sigh in relief that we were done with that episode.

### **Free Will**

Through it all, the incarnations, the time in the spirit realm, the planned trials on Earth, we are respected. Unlike children, who have little or no choice in most matters, we always have a choice. We can choose the better or lesser path. It does not matter in the long run, since all roads lead to perfection. Only the time spent is variable.

But at this juncture in the on-going history of the Earth, our free will choices have more weight. Since the Earth has now commenced upon the transformation from a planet of atonement to a planet of regeneration, the souls who fit within a more enlightened and spiritual environment shall be invited to remain within the bounds of Earth and continue to incarnate in successive lives here.

On the other hand, those who have persisted in their wrongful decisions – selfish, prideful, and greedy choices for example – will transition to a less lovely sphere and shall continue their ascendancy on a different planet of atonement. Or more dramatically, for those who have actively resisted the true path, on a primitive planet.

This is the separation of the wheat from the tares. This is the great apocalypse. It is now in progress and will be as the spirit world is directing the general improvement of the Earth and its inhabitants.

Free will has brought every person on Earth to this point in time. A pivotal point. A major decisive moment. A get on board or not judgment.

For those who sincerely desire to grasp the life preserver and be pulled onto the ship heading to paradise, then a greater determination should be fashioned to consciously make the right decisions.

Never before has what Buddha said more important than now - “The mind is everything. In order to live rightly, you must fill your mind with ‘right’ thoughts. Your thinking determines your actions; your actions determine your outcome. Right thinking will grant you everything you desire; wrong thinking is a vice that will eventually destroy you.” And if I may modify the last two words, from “destroy you” to a longer version of “set you back upon difficult and painful trials.”

Everything depends upon you. You are the center of your own universe. All that I have written in this book should lead you to consider yourself a potentially extremely powerful being, who only needs to dedicate and focus your energy on self-improvement to unlock the omniscient potential that resides in every free willed spirit created by God.

Christ and His army of benevolent spirits are here to help. To guide you in your free willed choices. Ask and you shall receive has always be true,

and in this critical juncture, it has never been more important to voluntarily follow wise counsel.

## **Love**

While we may look back and see a painful string of lives, where bad decisions were the norm – now, with our newfound knowledge we should comprehend that the pursuit of goodness is paramount. It helps to remember the goal. To live and exist in an atmosphere which is infused with love. Where we can add our love to the emanations coming from others.

From the words of Angels, High Spirits, near death experiences, and visions we encounter tales of feelings of deep satisfaction, warmth, and ecstasy – a state of perfect love. Where we experience no fear nor rejection, only acceptance, friendship, support, and affection.

God is Love. The spirit universe is based on Love. It is more than an emotional state – it is a state of being. To love is to not just feel deep affection for all creatures, but to analyze each situation, each person who requires guidance, to combine past experience with superior knowledge to create solutions which will enable that person to attain perfection someday.

The Golden Rule is a perfect description of Divine Love. To treat others as you would wish to be treated. Such a short sentence, but full of hidden meaning and tasks to be accomplished. To treat others correctly you must understand yourself first. You need to uncover the beauty that lies within you and come to yourself with warm love – with secure love that combines empathy, charity, and fraternity. Then you need to translate that to how the other person feels – not just surface emotions, but what they really need deep down in their insecure soul.

This is the future awaiting us. To reach that golden ring is an arduous journey; every major instance in our lives has been wrought with Divine Love. Everything is done with love and nurturing in mind. There is no punishment, only education.

It is the genius of the spirit realm, our planners, and their supervisors, that we are being taught in multiple aspects at one time. We learn by the episodes that are thrown at us – we acquire not only intellectual knowledge but wisdom, caring, and empathy. Through each class that we successfully paid attention to we not only became well rounded in information, but we

increased our emotional maturity and spiritual maturity. We gained an appreciation of the power of love.

By allowing love into our character, we are creating little pathways of light, so the tiny seed of Divine Love implanted within each of us can grow. As we spiritually mature, the outside us (our conscious) connects to the inside us (our sub-conscious) to instill tenets of love into every action we perform.

At some point in the future, our conscience and our love will combine naturally to influence every decision that comes upon us. And as we grow to habitually rely on these two pillars, we shall have the firm foundation to rise like rockets into glory.

### **Guidance is Everywhere**

As we climb upward absorbing the multifaceted lessons presented to us, the task to correctly acquire the prescribed curriculum is daunting. We must balance book learning, emotional transformation, spiritual enlightenment, and material pruning to renovate our ever-evolving character.

We are not alone in this endeavor. There is help at every corner. Like a marathon with water stations along the path, spirits, our mentors, and their assistants, are always on the alert as we travel through life. The further we scale the mountain, the better we identify the signs and signals of the other side lending their hands, offering needed assistance, and providing avenues for victory.

When a person begins the spiritual journey, they only see the words and feel what is within them. They do not detect the invisible hands; hence the start seems slow. They do not wake up one day and discover they are inner renewed. Instead, they awaken with the same worries they had the day before. Patience is required.

While one may read and begin to think about the spirit realm, via study and meditation, the effects are at first minimal. This is natural. Your personality has been evolving for thousands of years – one week, one month, or one year is not going to dramatically alter it. Give it time.

Behind the scenes, your dedication to self-transformation has been noticed. You are being tracked and analyzed to determine if this is a passing

fancy, or the first step of real discovery. Demonstrating your adherence to the plan of study you embarked upon is the key to unlocking a flood of assistance which will come your way.

Patience and hard work is the key. Work is the action, the actual transformation; patience is receiving guidance and results at the right time. Not your time, but the correct time.

This point cannot be stressed enough. Your concept of time and duration and worthiness is not aligned with the spirit realm. Your guardian angel will analyze your needs and provide you with what you require at the optimal point – when your heart and mind is most open to embrace that what is given to you. I repeat, not when you demand it or think you are due, but when the effect of the action will have a real impact upon your personality.

As the years run by, you shall see more clearly the machinations of superior spirits.

### **You Oversee Your Future**

Understanding your immortality, your eons length journey, your present maturity, and your goal sets the playing field for formulating your plan. First, a thorough review of character flaws, bad habits, and a stark analysis of the disruptive influence of society should be accomplished.

We are societal creatures, who tend to bend to the influences of the majority, without regard to morality. This mass of blind followers is destined to become the distinct minority. It is inevitable, the spirit world is planning for the Earth to ascend and those not on board, will be sent away. Hence, we should look upon the negative messages bombarding us as all stimuli to be ignored.

This is not going to be easy. Most movies are biased propaganda, attempting to persuade the audience that life is to be enjoyed at the fullest at whatever cost. That there are no consequences for bad behavior. That selfishness and violence are the answers to our problems.

Television programs and videos on internet platforms extol the virtues of epicurean delights. Promises are made that to purchase that special item, your life will be a paradise. That to live like a celebrity is the ultimate goal

in life. Cars, mansions, yachts, clothes, and a stable of serial or parallel relationships should be everyone's aim.

The underlying emptiness and stress of a person living such a lifestyle is seldom discussed. While this behavior certainly feels good in the short term, our implanted conscience will build up a nervous tension in our body, so that we become extremely restless and unsatisfied. This usually results in seeking even more pleasure, as if this is the cure. Whereas, the true prescription, is the elimination of any activity which transgresses our ingrained set of laws implanted into us by God – our conscience.

Thusly, acknowledge the fruitlessness of the relative morality spouted out by the mass media. Consciously ignore and reject it.

The next step is to filter out the superficial aspects of our culture. It is a heavy task – abandoning major portions of your belief system is seismic. Consider that we have been bathed in misconceptions since birth, school, work, and play – certain mistaken tenets have been ingrained within us. These will be different for each person depending upon the culture they grew up in and the style they were raised by their parents.

For example, most of us have the concept that God exists, but that He is distant and mostly uninterested in our life. The opposite is true. We also are led to be defensive about any attack on our character, even if it is true. We are told that we must be proud. Again, the opposite serves us better. We should welcome any constructive criticism. We need to swallow our pride and take any opportunity to discover the real truth about ourselves.

We grow up with a preconceived concept about ourselves and the world around us. A normal attitude would be that it is imperative to become well educated, get a good paying job, and work hard until you expire. That taking advantage of others is beneficial. This needs to be turned around. Yes, education is important, but it must balance between spiritual and material. Employment is vital, but it is not everything. You only require enough money so you can live and not be a burden on others. Lastly, following the Golden Rule is paramount. Advancing by walking over innocents is a major detriment to spiritual improvement.

The central point is to no longer place yourself at the center of the universe. As it was before Copernicus, in the fifteenth century, when it was



believed that Earth was the center, and all revolved around it. The general acceptance that Earth was not special and singled out by God to the exclusion of everything else took decades. Nevertheless, the logic of the stars could not be denied for long. Just as we must let go that our one life is all important. That an opportunity missed is gone forever. That if we fail life has no meaning. All concepts that are counterproductive in the light that we are works in progress, who span multiple lives and have an eternity to achieve our desires and fulfill our destiny.

Once the lingering effects of negative messages and accumulated foundational values are behind you, then, in a new light of discovery you can examine your deficiencies. Set small attainable goals.

Expecting to be perfect, free of all defects, in a short time is unrealistic. I have been striving for years and I am still just on the first step on refactoring my character. I realize this is a multiple life project.

Hence, aim to set foundation stones. Understand the spirit world, study the realm beyond our senses. Begin to repress and replace negative thoughts. Abandon malicious gossip, instead help, and support those in need. Look at everyone around you as young spirits in training. Going through their assigned trials and struggling the best they can. Do not overthink their situation, the spirit world will do that for you, simply lend a hand or positive advice.

The elimination of negative thoughts about others sets up a positive feedback loop. Thoughts from our minds travel throughout the spirit universe and they eventually return. Curtailing unhelpful notions creates a positive aura, where spirits, both advanced and low, will recognize you as a soul who is on their way to the light. Immature spirits will pass you by as a doubtful prospect and higher spirits will actively assist you.

Being positive is a powerful tool. As pessimistic emotions diminish, your stress level will rapidly decrease. Your outlook and health will improve. You will not even notice that you are removing primitive emotions, such as hate and anger, and replacing them with fraternity and charity. It shall occur as a natural consequence.

Acceptance of the facts of our journey, our assigned trials, and episodes, fortifies your newfound positive outlook. You can peer down from atop the

mountain and see your progress over many incarnations and welcome the path ahead. Because now you know where it leads.

We are programed to seek out to be productive, to be of service, to help the world move toward a higher goal. We can resist this urge for many lives, but it will eventually catch up with us. For those who are at this exciting self-realization stage, where altruism becomes a driving force, now is the time to revolutionize your life. Now is the time to start on the journey toward perfection.

### **The Alpha and the Omega**

“I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End.” – Rev. 22:13

Spiritism has revealed the truth of your existence. We live in a constructed, logically designed, and supremely complicated set of universes. Where all is recorded and stored. Where we are a “personality” who roams within the Universal Database according to our set of permissions.

Where we can “see” and “feel” and “smell” and “hear” and “taste” the data around us – that has been translated into definable objects that carry meaning to us. As if the stored pixels that represent the Mona Lisa arranged themselves upon command and the picture stood before us. Or the logical representation of a flower appears, where we can touch the soft petals and a sweet aroma waft over us. All instantaneously translated from categorized data to reality to please our senses. So, we may experience on a familiar level, a seemingly physical phenomena that which is exclusively informational.

In this world, seemingly all is possible. It would be difficult to approach the end of the possibilities even for those with an active imagination. We are only limited by the extent of our acquired knowledge and spirituality.

As we rise in knowledge and character, we retain ever more increasing control of our chosen path and the environment around us. It is as if we are directing our own movie in real time. We assemble the actors and the scenery, and the script plays out. We create, not alone, but with other spirits and our spirit mentors and superiors. Nevertheless, we have the freedom to veer off or remain on a lighted road. It is our decision.

Spirits have told us that we go from the objective (Earth) to the subjective (heaven) to the sublime (above heaven). On our planet in physical form, we are locked into place. We are the ones who must follow the lines from the script. As we spiritually mature, we begin to take an active role in determining the parts we shall play. In the spirit realm, we travel to the locations (or create them) we desire. The logical realm is malleable to our aspirations. Although, given our wish to be of service we frequently volunteer for important assignments.

There are hints of wonders above heaven, a sublimity. A state that we are unable to comprehend. An area with more dimensions, more power, more reach, and more responsibility. A place closer to God.

It is within this object – the universes created by God – that we began and shall exist for all eternity.

Hence, to fully exercise your potential, you must surrender to the truth. You shall never escape the Divine Universes, but you may be able to fully control where you are and how you live within it.

The road to freedom to roam the galaxies is open to all of us. But the effort is not trivial. There is not automatic granting of privileges or promotions after a set time. Only via strenuous self-introspection, purification, and acquisition of knowledge can the trek be accomplished.

Hence, demonstrate your dedication and you will be able to take part in planning your destiny. You can choose the paths you wish to follow. Those who realize the true state of the constructed campus we have been sent, will strive valiantly to graduate.

Each person has a decision to make. Start the journey now and follow the upward trajectory of the Earth or wait for the next life or the next. You have forever to decide.

### **The Future of the Remnant**

So, what happens to us who remain on Earth struggling toward the path to Goodness? The Spirit of Truth, as promised in the New Testament John 14:15-17, as the Consoler sent to Allan Kardec to reveal the Doctrine of Spiritism, tells us in *The Gospel According to Spiritism* , what will be:

“The time is near for the fulfillment of those things proclaimed for the transformation of humankind. Blessed will be those who have worked in the Lord’s field selflessly and with no other motive than charity! Their workdays will be paid a hundredfold more than what they expected. Blessed will be those who said to their fellow men and women, “Brothers and sisters, let us work together and combine our efforts so that the Master may find the work accomplished at his coming”; for the Master will say to them; “Come unto me, you who have been good servants, you who have known how to silence your jealousies and discords so that no harm will come to the work!” [\[52\]](#)

Our hundredfold reward will be life in heaven in the spirit realm. Where we shall be welcomed at a level befitting our hard work and dedication. When we next incarnate, it will be on a Regenerative planet. Where good outweighs evil and we can thrive in an environment relatively free of discord. With no fear of war or other violent ends. A place, a safe haven, to continue learning how we can progress to become a pure spirit.



## Glossary

Term	Description
Abyss or Dark Abyss	The Abyss begins just below the surface of the earth and extends downwards for an unspecified distance. This is the term for a type of Purgatory or Hell for spirits who are unrepentant and still intent on staying attached to worldly goods, baser emotions (such as hate, envy, and revenge), or other criminal intentions. There is no concept of eternal damnation in Spiritism; all spirits are able to leave when they change their character and beliefs. All will eventually rise to heaven, but it may take multiple lifetimes.
Allan Kardec	Known as the codifier of Spiritism. Many Brazilians believe he later reincarnated as Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier to carry on the presentation of Spiritism. His first book is <i>The Spirits Book</i> . He presented Spiritism to the world in the 1850s.

Term	Description
Andre Luiz	Spirit Author of a series of books, starting with <i>Nosso Lar</i> . All books were psychographed by Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier. Highly recommended reading for anyone interested in learning about Spiritism.
Camilo Branco	Camilo Castelo Branco wasn't just an ordinary suicide. He was a commanding figure in Portugal's literary scene in the late 1800's. He was known as the Portuguese Balzac and was awarded the title of Viscount of Correia Botelho. In despair over his son's insanity and his own ailments that would certainly lead to blindness, he ended his life in 1890.
Discarnate	A spirit in the spirit world, they do not possess a physical body.
Emmanuel	Emmanuel was the spirit mentor of Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier. Emmanuel has since incarnated in Brazil in the year 2001 or 2002. It is said by some Spiritist mediums that Chico Xavier, will be the spirit mentor for Emmanuel.

Term	Description
Errant spirit	I have seen two slightly different uses of “errant spirit”, the most used one is a spirit who is wandering in the Lower Zone, between heaven and the Abyss. The other usage is when a spirit is not assigned a region, and is free to wander onto different spirit worlds (where there is no physical life).
Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier	A Brazilian medium, who psychographed more than 450 books, dictated to him by spirits. His spirit guide was Emmanuel. Chico Xavier was a Spiritist and did much to spread Spiritism throughout Brazil.
Heaven	Heaven, in Spiritist books, including mine, usually refers to the higher regions above the earth. There are different heavens around other planets for those souls who live there. Heaven is where people in physical bodies return to, if they have demonstrated love, kindness, fraternity, charity, and honesty toward their fellow humans. Being a member of any one type of religion or even a belief in God is not a requirement to ascend to heaven, according to Spiritism.
Hell	Called the “Abyss” or the “Dark Abyss” in the books by the spirit Andre Luiz

<b>Term</b>	<b>Description</b>
Incarnate	An incarnate is a spirit who is inhabits a physical body. The spirit can still roam in the spirit world during time of sleep.
Jesus	According to Spiritism - Jesus is the governor of Earth. It has been reported by Brazilian Spiritist that Jesus is also in charge of four other planets, one in the forming stage, one primitive, one a planet of atonement (Earth), one a planet of regeneration, and one a happy planet.



<b>Term</b>	<b>Description</b>
Joanna De Angelis	<p>The spirit Joanna dictated many books to Divaldo Franco. She had lived many times on earth. Her first incarnation (that which was told to us by the spirit world) was as Joanna the wife of Cruz (as noted in the New Testament) in the first century during the time of Christ. We are told she dedicated her life with much love to the Gospel and her son. She died when she was burned alive next to her son and other Christians in the Roman coliseum.</p> <p>She was also known as Sor Juana Ines de la Cruz, She was the greatest poet in the Spanish speaking world. She was born on Nov. 13, 1651 and died on March 17, 1695, She was also very competent in Theology, Medicine, Canonical Law and Astronomy.</p>
Levels of Heaven	<p>As Jesus said in the New Testament, “My mansion has many rooms”, there are many levels of heaven. As one increases their spiritual and intellectual ability one graduates from a lower level to the next higher level. In the book, <i>Beyond the Veil</i> , a numbering system is used. Level 1 being the lowest. Spirits have said they are using that system just for convenience sake, as a tool to explain the demarcations of heaven for us here on earth.</p>

<b>Term</b>	<b>Description</b>
Lower Zone	Also called the Umbral in Portuguese, which you may find in some of the English translations of Chico Xavier's book. The Lower Zone is the area at the surface of the earth and slightly above it where spirits who haven't yet released their ties to material goods on earth and/or have not yet accepted the need for love and fraternity toward all humans. All will eventually rise to heaven, but it may take multiple lifetimes.
NDE	Near Death Experience – People who have had NDEs are those whose were close to or in an actual death state.
Nosso Lar	The first book dictated to Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier by the spirit Andre Luiz. A movie was made using the first book (of the same name) by the spirit author Andre Luiz. It is called Nosso Lar, or Celestial City. The movie is in Portuguese with English subtitles. I highly recommend this movie, excellent production values and true to the Doctrine of Spiritism.
OBE	Out of Body Experience – This includes people who were not classified as being in a near or at a state of death, but still were transported into another plane.

Term	Description
Perispirit	Connects the spirit to the physical body. You are composed to three key items – Your spirit (which is immortal), perispirit (which is the link between the spirit and the physical body), and your physical body (which is mortal and will be destroyed after each life).
Reincarnation	Reincarnation is the concept whereby a spirit, the entire personality and character, is deposited into a physical body. According to Spiritism, when a spirit is placed inside a physical body, they retain their basic character (which gets revealed around the age of 15 to 18), but they do not have any memories of past lives. This is for the purpose of allowing that spirit to learn the lessons assigned to them. Incarnates (spirits in physical bodies) do retain their conscience – the mechanism to determine right from wrong – and their instinct. Once a spirit sheds their physical body, at the proper time their memories return.
Rev. G. Vale Owen	An English Rev. in the Anglican Church. He received messages from the spirit realm in the 1910s and 20s. Four of his books are in the compilation book, <i>Beyond the Veil</i>

<b>Term</b>	<b>Description</b>
Spirit / Soul	I use the word interchangeably – but I do realize that many do not. For simplicity sake I use spirit to denote all of us, we all have or are spirits and we all have a soul. For those not on a physical plane I will put either their name or put “spirit” before their name to denote they currently reside in the spirit world.
Spirit World, Spirit Realm	The spirit world was created before our physical universe. We come from and shall return to the spirit realm. The world of spirits is where we shall spend the vast majority of our eternal life.
Spiritism, Christian Spiritism	A Doctrine codified by Allan Kardec in the 1850s, revealed to the world by the Spirit of Truth, as promised in the New Testament (John 14:15-17, 26). Spiritism follows the precepts of Christianity and updates them with new revelations from the spirit world.
Umbral	Also called the Lower Zone in English. The Lower Zone is the area at the surface of the earth and slightly above it where spirits who haven’t yet released their ties to material goods on earth and/or have not yet accepted the need for love and fraternity toward all humans. All will eventually rise to heaven, but it may take multiple lifetimes.

<b>Term</b>	<b>Description</b>
Universal Fluid	From this, flows all forms of matter. It is the basis for everything in the spirit and physical universes.
Yvonne Perreira	A Brazilian medium who psychographed books from spirits. She has many books published in Portuguese. Presently there are two books translated in English

## [Your Exploration Continues . . .](#)

Learn more about Spiritism in my blog at: <http://www.nwspiritism.com> .

To assist you in understanding more about Spiritism, I have fourteen other books to support you in your spiritual exploration:

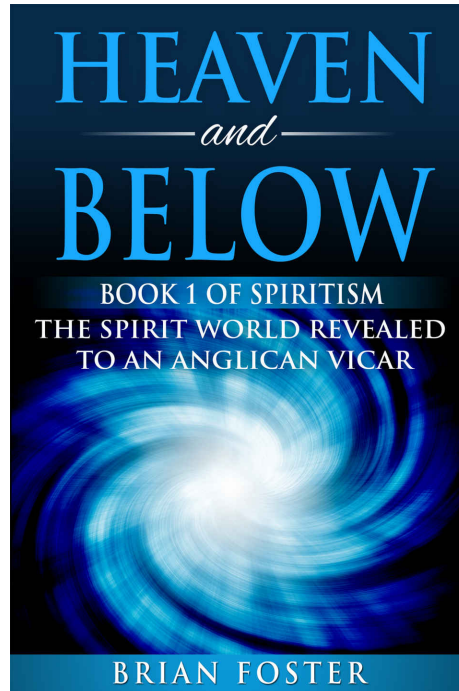
- Heaven and Below – Book 1 of Spiritism - The Spirit World Revealed to a Anglican Vicar
- Spirits and the Spirit Universe – Book 2 of Spiritism - The Spirit World Revealed to a Anglican Vicar
- How we are Guided by Spirits – Book 3 of Spiritism - The Spirit World Revealed to a Anglican Vicar
- How to Live – Inner Peace through Spiritism
- Spiritism 101 – The Third Revelation
- The 1000 Year March – Toward a Just Society
- The Spirit World Talks to Us
- 7 Tenets of Spiritism – How They Impact Your Daily Life
- Explore Your Destiny – Since Your Life’s Path is (mostly) Predetermined
- The Case for Reincarnation – Your Path to Perfection
- 51 Disclosures from Spiritism – The 3<sup>rd</sup> Revelation
- What Really Happens During Near Death Experiences According to Spiritism – 12 NDEs Explained and Explored
- The Problem is the Solution
- Spiritism - Everything is Connected

Below are brief introductions to all my books concerning Spiritism.





## Heaven and Below – Book 1



This book covers communications that pertain to three main themes:

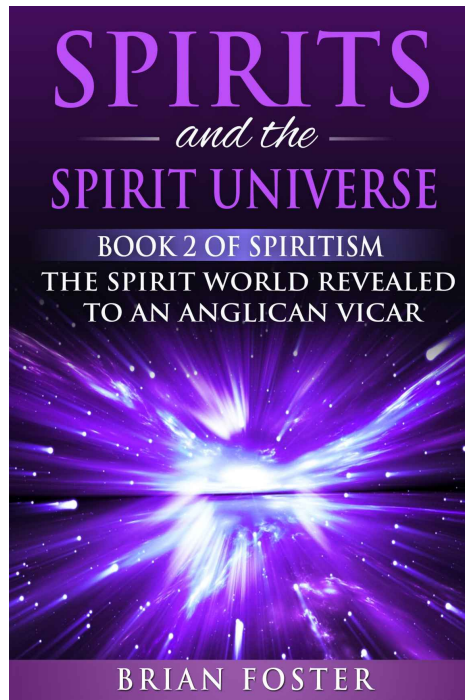
- Life in heaven
- Lower regions
- Appearances of Jesus in the spirit realm

Many religions offer pictures of life after our spirit leaves our physical body. Most descriptions are hazy and prone to numerous interpretations. Spiritism, via communication from spirits who have been selected by high-level spirits, supplies us with real and actionable knowledge. Revelations in Spiritist literature presents an exciting picture of the bands of heaven and life therein. While a fuller explanation is extended about aspects of life and the organization of the regions below heaven.





## Spirits and the Spirit Universe – Book 2



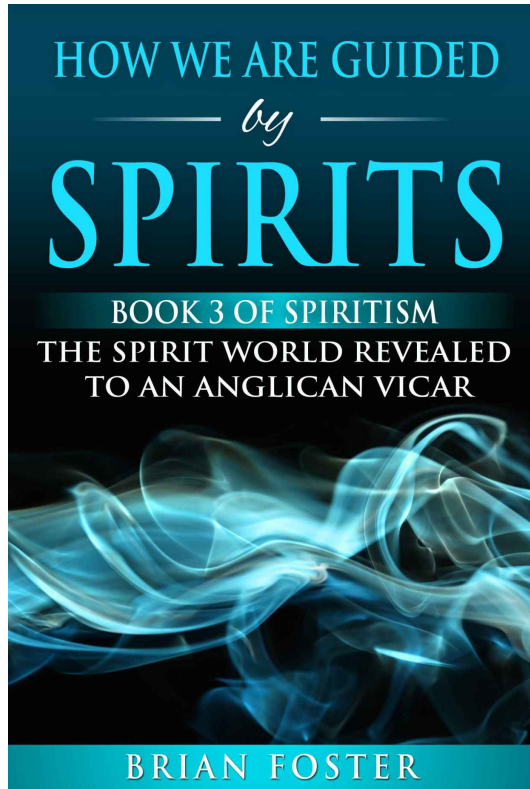
This book covers communications to the Rev. G. Val Owen that pertain to five main themes:

- Spirit Education – Lower levels of heaven
- Spirit Education – Higher levels of heaven
- Spirit Attributes
- Power of Spirits
- Knowledge of the Universe(s)

Imagine a fantasy world where, if you apply yourself, you can travel from sphere to higher sphere, accumulating new attributes and powers after graduating from each level. Nothing could stop you, for there are no limits, promotion is based solely on merit. Within each stage your mind is fully engaged in comprehending the most extraordinary knowledge; all within an atmosphere of supportive and congenial friends. If this sounds like heaven to you, then you are correct – it is heaven.



## How we are Guided by Spirits – Book 3



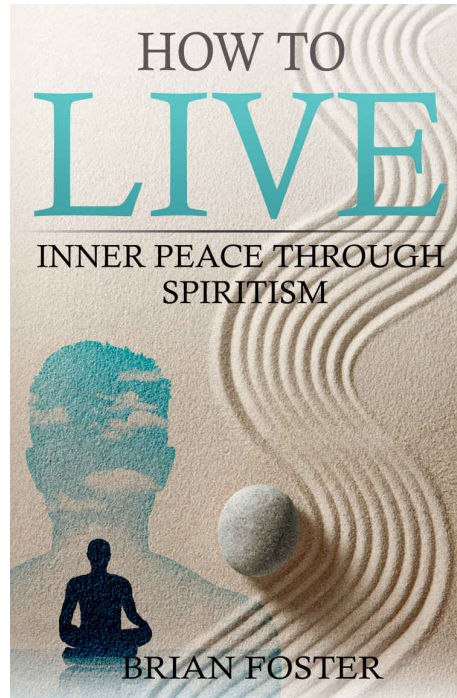
This book covers communications to the Rev. G. Vale Owen that pertain to three main themes:

- Guiding humans on earth
- Spirit assistance
- Future events

Book 3 illustrates the ground game of the spirit world. Via the messages of multiple spirits to the Rev. G. Vale Owen we are presented examples of how the spirit realm above us peers down upon their unruly students. The process of tracking and modifying behavior on an individual and a collective basis is revealed. Even the broader direction of human society in the future is posted for all to see.



## How to Live – Inner Peace through Spiritism



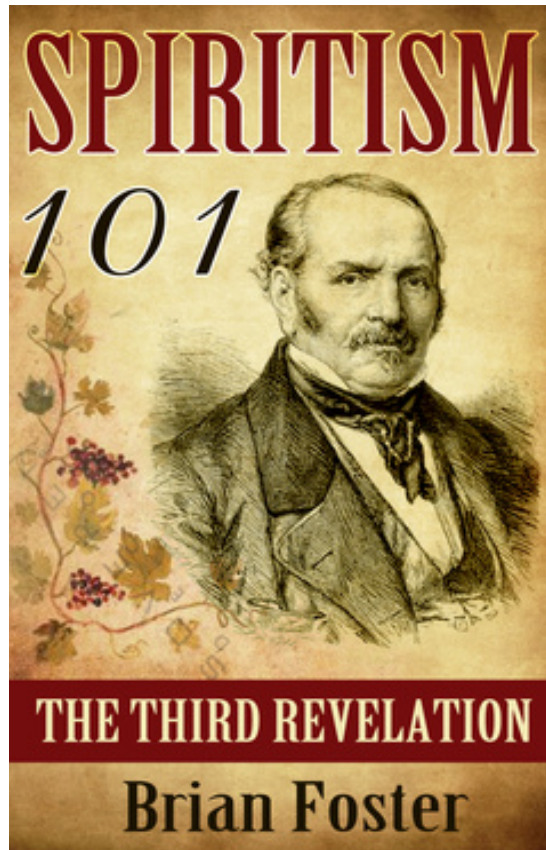
In the spirit world thought is action. As a spirit, our mind creates the environment in which we live. Hence the more control we have over our own thoughts, the more calm, the more reasoning, the more loving we become ... all contribute to a true paradise awaiting us when we are scheduled to pass back to the real world - the spirit realm.

Each chapter will explore one aspect of attaining inner peace. I shall attempt to describe the end state of what was envisioned in the specific verse and why this state is vital for your spiritual growth.

Inner Peace is more than a list of spiritual conquests - it is what should be the result of full integration into the Spiritist Doctrine. Inner Peace is the result, the summit of attainment possible in our short earth lives. The climb is worth the effort and upon reaching the summit you shall view more mountains to scale and ever-increasing rewards to attain in your quest.



## Spiritism 101 – The Third Revelation



Something wonderful has happened. It occurred in the middle of the 1800's and it caught the attention of the world. It grew quickly in popularity, so fast that many in positions of power went on a crusade to stamp it out.

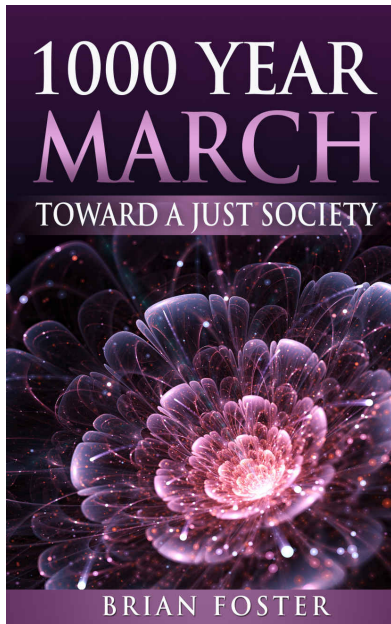
Why? Because it provided answers to questions that we all have been searching for. Questions that have been posed by philosophers since the beginning of time were asked and the results fully described.

Like other messages of love, charity and fraternity before; this one was met with strong opposition. Ideas are hard to stamp out and this one is growing again. The world is re-awakening to Spiritism.

Learn what Spiritism is and how it can positively shape your life and happiness. Available at Amazon Kindle for \$0.99, and in paperback - [\*Spiritism 101 – The Third Revelation\*](#)



## The 1000 Year March – Toward a Just Society



The development of these ideas (Spiritism) present three distinct periods. The first is that of curiosity, excited by the strangeness of the phenomena produced; the second, that of reasoning and philosophy; the third, that of applications and consequences.” (Allan Kardec) We are in the third period of the Third Revelation, that of Application and Consequences.

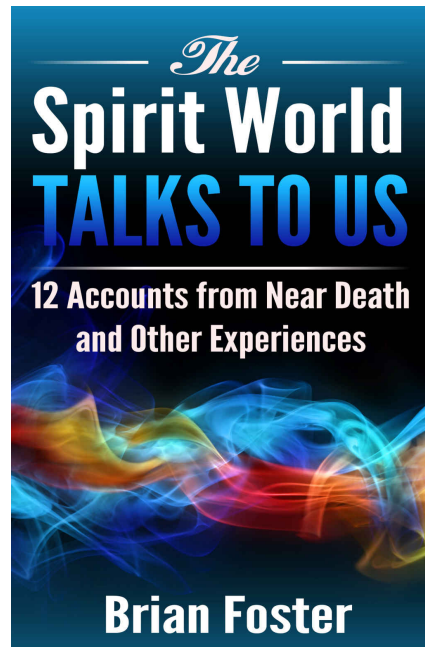
Hence, the excitement has been worn off during the early heady years of Allan Kardec, the Doctrine has been discussed and further defined by the books of Leon Denis, Francisco (Chico) C. Xavier, Yvonne Pereira, Divaldo Franco and other mediums. Now it is the time to start applying the Doctrine, to not only our daily lives but to transform the world.

A world of respect and justice, without martial conflicts. Sounds easy, but extremely difficult to implement. And it must be a gradual and non-violent evolution. For the end does not justify the means. The means (love, charity, fraternity, respect, and honor) justify the end, for that is the only path which adheres to what we have learned.

Learn what is in store for your future lives – [The 1000 Year March – Toward a Just Society](#).



## The Spirit World Talks to Us



The spirit world is talking to us ... each and every one of us. Most of us are unaware of the subtle signals and soft voices that draw us to listen to our conscience. But they are there, ever hopeful that we may discover the truth about our sojourn on this blue planet.

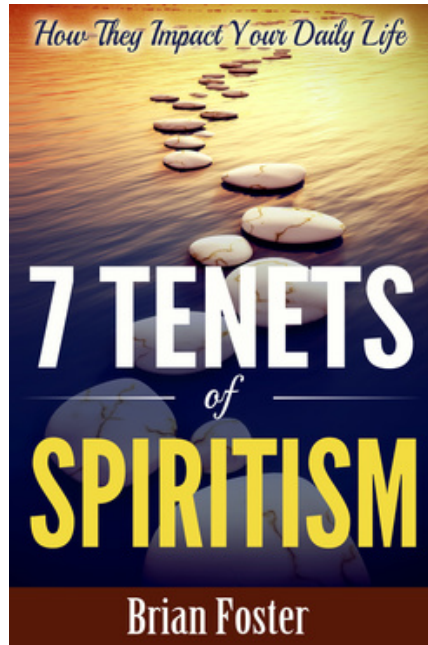
The experiences reviewed in this book layout exciting disclosures about the spirit world and ours. We are told about heaven, the different spiritual zones around the earth; how karma is real and why we need multiple lives to learn to become a person who radiates love in all circumstances. We learn that the concept of time is different in the spirit universe and about the basic building blocks of all matter.

In essence, the inquiries that you have had since you began questioning your place in this universe are answered by spirits interacting with the chosen few.

Learn what the spirit world is telling us. – [The Spirit World Talks to Us](#)



## 7 Tenets of Spiritism – How They Impact Your Daily Life



I explore each of the seven tenets and how they have personally affected me and those around me. Giving yourself the seven tenets could be the best present of your life.

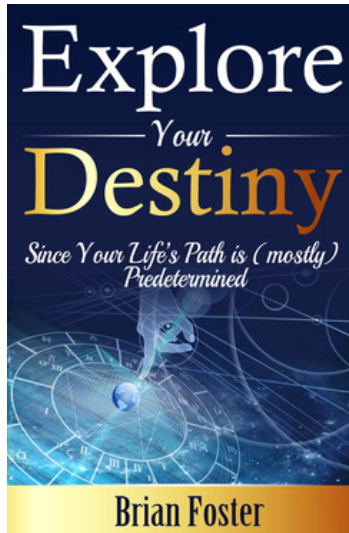
The 7 Tenets of Spiritism:

1. We are Immortal Souls
2. God and Jesus Love Us
3. We have Multiple Lives
4. During our Lives We Pay for Past Debts and Accumulate New Experiences
5. We Live and Learn in Close Family Groups
6. Our Destiny is Mostly Predetermined
7. We are Assisted in our Lives by Unseen Spirit Forces

Available at Amazon Kindle and in paperback, at [7 Tenets of Spiritism – How They Impact Your Daily Life](#).



## Explore Your Destiny – Since Your Life’s Path is (mostly) Predetermined



*Explore Your Destiny* is divided into four sections. Each section supplies one more piece of the puzzle for you to place, so you can look at your life’s arc with new insights.

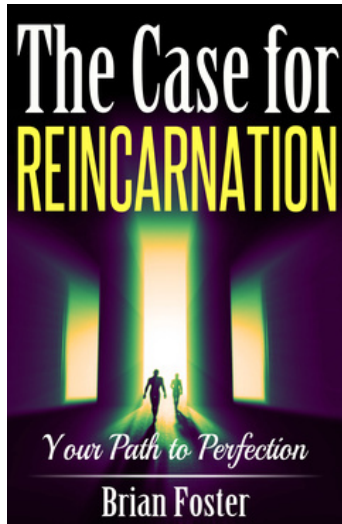
1. Why – Why are we here and why must we live what we are living through right now?
2. When – In what period along your souls timeline is all of this happening? Knowing your relative position in the path to perfection will guide you to understanding your current life.
3. How – How does all of this occur? How does the entire process affect your destiny and actions? What are the rules of the game?
4. Where – Where is this world that plans our destiny? Are there good places to be and are there bad?

[Explore Your Destiny – Since Your Life’s Path is \(mostly\) Predetermined](#).





## The Case for Reincarnation – Your Path to Perfection



There is a realm, a universe greater than ours and it is filled with intelligences that we can only wonder at. There are spirits around the earth who are actively helping and guiding us in our planning and during our actual incarnations.

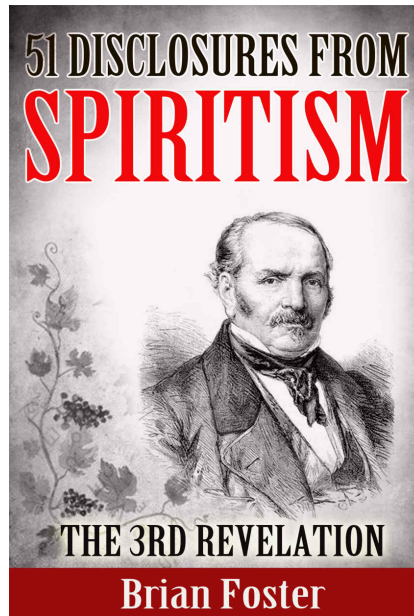
This book is here to answer your questions;

1. Why do we reincarnate?
2. How does the process work?
3. How many reincarnations must we have?
4. What memories do we retain from our previous lives?
5. Do we have control over our reincarnations?
6. Why must we suffer?
7. How may I insure my next life is better?
8. How may I progress to being a perfected spirit?

[The Case for Reincarnation – Your Path to Perfection](#)



## 51 Disclosures from Spiritism – The 3<sup>rd</sup> Revelation



Spiritism has been presented to humankind for one reason, to enlighten us. To let us know the answers to questions that everyone has had since we started thinking about our place on earth, our destiny, why we are here, and is there life after death.

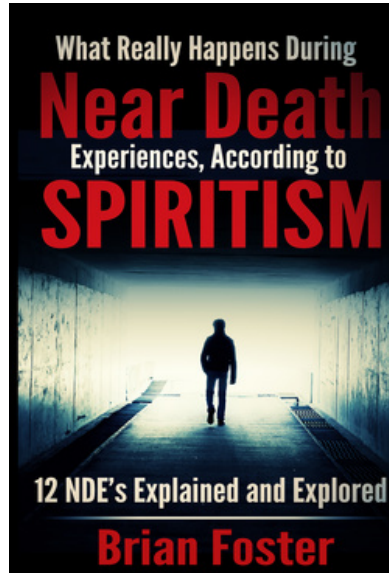
This book is divided into four sections, each categorizing a theme for the type of discoveries that you will make as you read:

1. Ourselves – What are we, why are we here, what do we have to do, what is our goal?
2. Spirit Realm – What is it, where is it, how does it work?
3. How to Ascend – What is the path to ascension, what is important to learn, why we must grow?
4. Prophecies – What do some past prophecies actually mean, what will happen to the world, how will it happen?

Learn what has been presented to the world, read the book, [51 Disclosures from Spiritism – The 3<sup>rd</sup> Revelation](#).



## What Really Happens During Near Death Experiences, According to Spiritism



Why are we interested in Near Death Experiences (NDE)? With the advent of the internet, social media allows masses of people to more efficiently pool together shared experiences than at any other time in history.

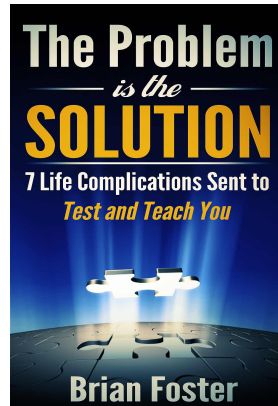
Recollections from every country, culture, language and age group now reside in the great internet cloud. A mountain of data, which can no longer be wished away or ignored. The parallels and common themes from all corners of the world preclude everyone's account to be merely mass hysteria.

Spiritism explains why each person was chosen for their experience and what was presented to them. Find out what they were expected to learn from their life changing event.

[What Really Happens During Near Death Experiences – 12 NDEs Explained and Explored is available at Amazon .](#)



## The Problem is the Solution



This book is different. Not that the others are bad or useless. Just that this book is different. It rests on an altered premise; life is a planned series of trials.

In this book you will learn to analyze why are you experiencing, or have been through, the following types of events:

1. Financial problems
2. Failed relationship(s) / marriage(s)
3. Family problems
4. Illnesses – physical and mental
5. Career setbacks
6. Addiction
7. Stress

And in doing so, you shall be able to make the first step in analyzing what you should have learned and how it will make you a better person.

*The Problem is the Solution – 7 Life Complications Sent to Test and Teach You*



## Spiritism – Everything is Connected



This book presents information about Spiritism and how our lives are tethered to the spirit world and everyone else on this planet. I have divided my essays into three categories:

- What is Spiritism
- How the Spirit World Guides the Earth
- How the Spirit Realm Assists Us

All are interrelated. There are no hard dividing lines where our lives are unaffected by spirits around us. We literally walk in a sea of spirits. We hear and are unconsciously directed by suggestions from spirits. All types of spirits. Good, bad, indifferent, and foolish spirits.

Buy [\*Spiritism – Everything is Connected\*](#) at Amazon.



## Author

Stay in touch with the author via:

Spiritist Blog: <http://www.nwspiritism.com>

Facebook: <https://www.facebook.com/nwspiritism>

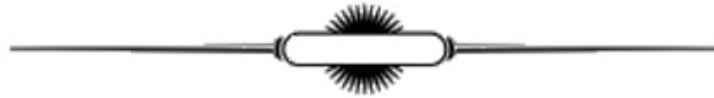
Facebook group to discuss Spiritism:  
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/Spiritist/>

Twitter: <https://twitter.com/nwspiritism>

YouTube channel: [NW Spiritism](#)

Author page on Amazon: <https://www.amazon.com/Brian-Foster/e/B00O6JBO0G>

If you liked *The Spirit Realm – Spiritism has Reveled the Reality of Our Existence* , please post a review at Amazon.



# Copyright

This book is licensed for your personal enjoyment only. This book may not be re-sold or given away to other people. If you like to share this book with another person, please purchase an additional copy for each person you share it with.

**Copyright © 2021 Brian Foster** . All rights reserved. Including the right to reproduce this book or portions thereof, in any form. No part of this text may be reproduced in any form without the express written permission of the author.

Version 2021.01.31.01



## Bibliography

- Augustine, S. (2013). *The Complete Works of Saint Augustine*. Kindle.
- Baker, M. M. (2016, July 15). *The Life of Jesus* . Retrieved from The Life of Jesus: <https://lifeofjesus.wordpress.com>
- Denis, L. (2003). *Here and Hereafter*. New York: Spiritist Alliance for Books (SAB) (pdf version).
- Denis, L. (2012). *Life and Destiny*. Forgotten Books.
- Dias, H. D. (2014, Dec. 23). *Seminário Apocalipse, Mitos e Verdades com Haroldo Dutra Dias\_1ª parte* . Retrieved from YouTube: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4SU2b11IbMg>
- Divaldo, F. (2012). *Adolescence and Life*. Salvador, Bahia: LEAL.
- France, D. (2010). *Family Constellation*. Salvador: Leal.
- Franco, D. (2005). *Self-Discovery - An Inner Search*. Salvador, Bahia: Leal Publisher.
- Franco, D. (2013). *The Psychology of Gratitude*. Salvador (Bahia): Leal Publishing.
- Franco, D. (2016). *Life: Challenges and Solutions*. Miami: LEAL Publisher.
- Franco, D. (2016). *Planetary Transition*. Miami, Florida: Leal Publisher.
- Franco, D. (2016). *Plentitude*. Miami, Florida: Leal Publisher.
- Franco, D. (2016). *Times of Health and Conscientiousness*. Miami: LEAL Publisher.
- Honório, T. S. (2015, June 13). *Spiritual Contracts* . Retrieved from Kardec: <http://www.kardec.com/Spiritual-Contracts.html>
- Hopper, R. (2007). *Jesus Buddha Krishna Lao Tzu - The Parrallel Sayings*. Smashwords Edition.
- Kardec, A. (2006). *Heaven and Hell*. Brasilia (DF), Brasil: International Spiritist Council.



- Kardec, A. (2008). *The Gospel According to Spiritism*. Brasilia (DF): International Spiritist Council.
- Kardec, A. (2009). *Genesis - Miracles and Predictions according to Spiritism*. Brasilia (DF), Brasil: International Spiritist Council.
- Kardec, A. (2010). *The Book on Mediums*. Guildford, England: White Crow Books.
- Kardec, A. (2010). *The Spirits Book*. Guildford, UK: White Crow Books.
- Kardec, A. (2010). *The Spirits Book*. Guildford, UK: White Crow Books.
- Kardec, A. (2015). *Spiritist Review, Journal of Psychological Studies - 1858*. United States Spiritist Council and IPEAK.
- Kardec, A. (2015). *The Spiritist Review - Journal of Psychological Review - 1859*. United States Spiritist Council and the Spiritist Research Institute (IPEAK).
- Montesquieu. (2013, 12 24). *Philosophy and Philosophers - Montesquieu* . Retrieved December 15, 2013, from Philosophy and Philosophers: <http://www.the-philosophy.com/montesquieu-quotes>
- Owen, R. G. (1971). *The Outlands of Heaven*. London: The Greater World Association Trust.
- Owen, R. G. (2012). *The Life Beyond the Veil*. Pahrump, NV: Square Circles Publishing.
- Pereira, Y. A. (2012). *Memoirs of a Suicide*. Brasilia (DF), Brasil: International Spiritist Council (EDICEI).
- Roth, A. A. (2007). *Science Discovers God, Seven Convincing Lines of Evidence for His Existence*. Hagerstown. MD: Autumn House Publishing.
- Voltaire. (2013, 12 23). *Proverbia - Voltarie Quotes* . Retrieved December 15, 2013, from Proverbia: <http://en.proverbia.net/citasautor.asp?autor=17462>
- Wikipedia. (2014, September 20). *Subtle Body* . Retrieved from Wikipedia: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Subtle\\_body](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Subtle_body)

- Xavier, F. &. (2010). *Among Brothers of Other Lands*. Brasilia (DF): EDICEI.
- Xavier, F. C. (1946). *Message from a Teen in the Spirit World*. Pedro Leopoldo, Brazil: International Spiritist Council.
- Xavier, F. C. (2004). *In the Domain of Mediumship*. New York: Spiritist Alliance of Books, Inc.
- Xavier, F. C. (2006). *The Pathway, the Truth & Life*. Brasilia: International Spiritist Council.
- Xavier, F. C. (2008). *The Messengers*. Philadelphia, PA: Allan Kardec Educational Society.
- Xavier, F. C. (2008). *Workers of the Life Eternal*. Brasilia (DF) - Brazil: International Spiritist Council.
- Xavier, F. C. (2009). *And Life Goes On*. Brasilia (DF), Brasil: International Spiritist Council.
- Xavier, F. C. (2009). *In the Greater World*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.
- Xavier, F. C. (2009). *Jesus in the Home*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: EDICEI.
- Xavier, F. C. (2009). *Missionaries of the Light*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.
- Xavier, F. C. (2010). *Action and Reaction*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.
- Xavier, F. C. (2010). *Nosso Lar*. Brasilia - (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.
- Xavier, F. C. (2010). *Our Daily Bread*. Brasilia (DF) - Brazil: EDICEI.
- Xavier, F. C. (2011). *Between Heaven and Earth*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.
- Xavier, F. C. (2011). *In the Realms of Mediumship*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: EDICEI.
- Xavier, F. C. (2011). *On the Way to the Light*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2012). *Hail Christ!* Brasilia (DF): EDICEI.

Xavier, F. C. (2012). *Thought & Life*. London: Roundtable Publishing Limited.

Xavier, F. C. (2013). *Liberation*. Brasilia (DF), Brazil: International Spiritist Council.

Xavier, F. C. (2013). *Sex and Destiny*. Miami, FL: EDICEI of America.

Xavier, F. C. (2013). *Voltei*. Brasilia (DF): FEB.

Xavier, F. C., & Pires, J. H. (2015). *Spiritual Wisdom: Missives of Hope*. New York: Spiritist Alliance for Books (SAB).

## Footnotes

---

- [1] \_Xavier, F.C. Liberation, EDICEI, p. 57
- [2] \_Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 299-300
- [3] \_Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 490-491
- [4] \_Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 546-547
- [5] \_Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 548
- [6] \_Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 611
- [7] \_Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 614
- [8] \_Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 615-616
- [9] \_KARDEC, Allan, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Ques. 1, p.60
- [10] \_KARDEC, Allan, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, p.64
- [11] \_KARDEC, Allan, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Ques. 10, p.63
- [12] \_KARDEC, Allan, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Ques. 11, p.63
- [13] \_Wikipedia, “Subtle Body”, n.d.,  
[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Subtle\\_body](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Subtle_body), (accessed September 20, 2014)
- [14] \_Kardec, A, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Book 2, Question 97
- [15] \_Kardec, A, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Book 2, Question 101
- [16] \_Kardec, A, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Book 2, Questions 103-106
- [17] \_Kardec, A, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Book 2, Question 107
- [18] \_Kardec, A, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Book 2, Questions 108-111
- [19] \_Kardec, A, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Book 2, Question 113

- [20] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, Greater World Association Trust, p. 68
- [21] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, Greater World Association Trust, p. 68
- [22] Owen, G. Vale, The Outlands of Heaven, Greater World Association Trust, pp. 69-70
- [23] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 518-519
- [24] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 519
- [25] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 520
- [26] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 520
- [27] Xavier, F. C., On the Way to the Light, EDICEI, pp.116-117
- [28] Xavier, F. C., On the Way to the Light, EDICEI, p.210
- [29] Kardec, A, The Spirits Book, White Crow Books, Book 2, Question 540
- [30] Hopper, Richard, Jesus Buddha Krishna Lao Tzu – The Parallel Sayings, Smashword Edition, pp. 138-139
- [31] XAVIER, Francisco C. Between Heaven and Earth, EDICEI, pp. 132-133
- [32] XAVIER, Francisco C. Between Heaven and Earth, EDICEI, p. 136
- [33] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 140
- [34] Kardec, Allan, Spiritist Review, Journal of Psychological Studies – 1858, United States Spiritist Council, pp. 557-559
- [35] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 140
- [36] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 140
- [37] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, pp. 140-141
- [38] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 141
- [39] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 141
- [40] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 118
- [41] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 118
- [42] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 119
- [43] Owen R. G. Life Beyond the Veil, Squares Circles Publishing, p. 119

<sup>[44]</sup> Kardec, A., The Spiritist Review – Journal of Psychological Review – 1859, United States Spiritist Council, p. 35

<sup>[45]</sup> Denis, Leon, Life and Destiny, Forgotten Books, pp. 261-262

<sup>[46]</sup> Franco, Divaldo, Planetary Transition, LEAL, pp. 138-140

<sup>[47]</sup> Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 658-659

<sup>[48]</sup> Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 665-666

<sup>[49]</sup> Owen, G. Vale, The Life Beyond the Veil, Square Circles Publishing, pp. 667-668

<sup>[50]</sup> Franco, Divaldo, Planetary Transition, LEAL, p. 136

<sup>[51]</sup> Franco, Divaldo, Planetary Transition, LEAL, pp. 138-140

<sup>[52]</sup> Kardec, A., The Gospel According to Spiritism, EDICEI, p. 327